COPTIC GRAMMATICAL CHRESTOMATHY

A Course for Academic and Private Study
ORIENTALIA LOVANIENSIA

ANALECTA

1. E. Lipiński, Studies in Aramaic Inscriptions and Onomastics I.
2. J. Quaegebeur, Le dieu égyptien Shaî dans la religion et l'onomastique.
14. E. Platti, Yâbyâ ibn ‘Adî, théologien chrétien et philosophe arabe.
15. E. Gubel-E. Lipiński-B. Servais-Soyer (ed.), Studia Phoenicia I-II.
17. M. van Mol, Handboek Modern Arabisch.
22. E. Lipiński (ed.), Phoenicia and the East Mediterranean in the First Millennium B.C.
27. E. Verreet, Eine morpho-syntaktische Abhandlung über das Modalsystem im Ugaritischen.
COPTIC
GRAMMATICAL CHRESTOMATHY

A COURSE FOR ACADEMIC AND PRIVATE STUDY

EDITED BY
A. SHISHA-HALEVY

PEETERS
LEUVEN
1988
For my parents
TABLE OF CONTENTS

INTRODUCTORY NOTES. Aims and conception; text sources; selection policy and arrangement; structure of the Chrestomathy; technical information, editorial policy, terminology; guide-lines and practical suggestions for the student; Egyptian and Coptic

SCHEMATIC STRUCTURAL OUTLINE OF THE CHRESTOMATHY

THE ALPHABET

GLOSSARY PRACTICE

FIRST PART (units I-VI, sections 1-26): THE FORMAL-FUNCTIONAL SYSTEM

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Unit</th>
<th>Title</th>
<th>Pages</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>I</td>
<td>The noun phrase (noun and verb lexemes), the Nominal Sentence, the Proper Name (sections 1-4); the adverb phrase (section 5)</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II</td>
<td>The tense-base conjugation (“Tripartite” pattern); the imperative; the causative conjugation (sections 6-11)</td>
<td>32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>III</td>
<td>Presentative and existential clauses (sections 12-14)</td>
<td>62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IV</td>
<td>The durative (“Bipartite”) conjugation (sections 15-18)</td>
<td>72</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V</td>
<td>The adverb predicated (sections 19-21)</td>
<td>94</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VI</td>
<td>Synthetic conjugation forms with suffixed subject (sections 22-26)</td>
<td>101</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

SECOND PART (units I-IV, sections 27-51): TOPICS OF ADVANCED SYNTAX

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Unit</th>
<th>Title</th>
<th>Pages</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>I</td>
<td>Conversion</td>
<td>113</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I-A</td>
<td>The circumstantial conversion (sections 27-30)</td>
<td>113</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I-B</td>
<td>The relative conversion (sections 31-33)</td>
<td>120</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I-C</td>
<td>The “Second Tense” conversion (sections 34-38)</td>
<td>128</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I-D</td>
<td>The preterite conversion (sections 39-41)</td>
<td>134</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II</td>
<td>The conjunctive (sections 42-43)</td>
<td>142</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>III</td>
<td>Conditional and related constructions (sections 44-48)</td>
<td>147</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IV</td>
<td>The infinitive outside conjugation (sections 49-51)</td>
<td>152</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

THIRD PART: ASSORTED UNCLASSIFIED TEXTS (graded according to difficulty)

TABLES: A. PRONOUNS (articles, demonstratives, personal pronouns)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>B. Nominal Sentence patterns</td>
<td>172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C. The base (&quot;tripartite&quot;) conjugation</td>
<td>175</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>D. The causative conjugation</td>
<td>180</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E. Existential and possessive statements</td>
<td>182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>F. The durative conjugation</td>
<td>184</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>G. The converters</td>
<td>194</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H. The &quot;adjective verbs&quot;</td>
<td>196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I. Lexical verb morphology</td>
<td>197</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>J. Classification</td>
<td>199</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Glossary</td>
<td>202</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bibliography</td>
<td>257</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Index to the grammatical terms</td>
<td>260</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Terminological glossary and correspondence-list</td>
<td>261</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
COPTIC GRAMMATICAL CHRESTOMATHY
(THE SAHIDIC DIALECT)

INTRODUCTORY NOTES:

(1) AIMS AND CONCEPTION. The following reasoned collection of texts is intended to serve as a means for acquiring acquaintance with the elements of Sahidic Coptic grammar, giving the student the competence and confidence which should enable him to deal subsequently with any Coptic text as far as grammatical analysis and translation is concerned; it is meant for students approaching the language for its general linguistic, Egyptological, theological or literary interests. This is neither a grammar, nor a textbook, not yet an "Introduction to Coptic", but a custom-built annotated anthology meant as a one-year (approx. 40 weeks, 4 to 6 weekly hours) course of initiation into the analysis of Coptic texts, expressly meant as a substitute to so-called "grammars". It is meant for self-tuition, for assisted university courses (e.g. as a framework for a series of lectures), and for use in conjunction with existing textbooks. The conception underlying this chrestomathy is connected with a deep scepticism regarding the scientific validity of conventional "grammars" for a didactic introduction to a language as well as their effectiveness in achieving the goal of "teaching a language". This conception, no less than a procedural professional tenet, recognizes only THE TEXT, never grammatical opinion "on the language" or models of grammar, as the way to acquire unbiased linguistic insight and "sense of system". More specifically, I see the "ascending", synthetic direction of building grammatical familiarity in ever-increasing extent as the didactic counterpart as well as product of the "descending" textual analysis which I adopt as the sole valid structural one. I have tried to distil into this chrestomathy the experience of twenty years of teaching Coptic at the Hebrew University and abroad, to students of linguistics, Egyptology, archaeology and other fields, and to apply to its construction sensitivity both to the linguistic structure of Coptic and to the special didactic needs of its students.

(2) TEXT SOURCES. For reasons I have made clear elsewhere, I believe the literary corpus of the writings of Shenoute, the 4th-5th century prior and Archimandrite to be an ideal basis for acquiring an understanding
of Sahidic grammatical structure. It is extensive, authentic (i.e. untranslated), idiomatic and as idiolectic a text as one can wish for. Although Scripture Coptic seems often less complicated for beginners, this easiness is usually paid for with a heavy price of helplessness and feeling of unfamiliarity when leaving this textual hothouse, and may, I believe, be compensated for by thoughtful selection and proper arrangement of the material. The student who approaches the Coptic Scriptures after studying the Chrestomathy will find them relatively unproblematic and easy to tackle. I have here drawn from the major published editions as well as some unpublished fragments of Shenoute’s opus.

(3) SELECTION POLICY AND ARRANGEMENT. This Chrestomathy (originally inspired by J. Strachan’s Old Irish Paradigms and Selections from the Old Irish Glosses, Dublin 1904-5 and often reprinted since, and H.B. Rosén’s Specimens of Gothic (Gothic and Hebrew; the Hebrew University Department of Linguistics, for private circulation) is constructed on the principles of cumulativeness (progressive advance, gradation of difficulty, ever-increasing extent of analysis) and system scanning. A prime principle — one which, in conjunction with the other two makes selection so very difficult — is NON-INTERFERENCE WITH THE TEXT: the least omission or gapping for reasons of difficulty or complexity, no “editing”. The student must get acquainted at just the right conjunction with the elements requisite to assure his progress to analyzing more complex units. I have tried hard not to leave out the exemplification of any constituent element of phrase or clause, although completeness of the system depicted is, of course, not feasible and not aimed for. Such phenomena as are not treated in a special section or sub-section of texts are usually commented on in notes, and may be recovered by using the subject index. The CHOICE OF TEXTS aims at a varied and “capricious” illustration, to ensure as realistic a textual experience as possible and recapture the feeling of a natural and context-dependent text, counter-effecting the classifiedness and metatextual “paradigmatic” feel, and convey a taste of actual complexity. Redundance — repetition of texts and notes — is programmatic, for the sake of reviewing, solidifying familiarity and observing grammatical features from several different aspects, in different contexts and different grades of resolution, as well as letting autodidacts enjoy something like a teacher’s patient attention. An impression of relative statistical importance is meant to be given by the quantitative difference in strength of illustration, with “flooding” for certain topics such as noun determination and the main tenses.
"Imports" from outside the corpus are as a rule avoided (except for one or two cases): rarity or non-attestation is no less important than attestation as a piece of grammatical information. Note that the grammatical opinion reflected in the classification and selection, although hopefully not distorted, is often practical and idealizing: typologies and "pigeonholes" are made out to be sharper and clearer than they really are. Inside a section or sub-section, the arrangement is consciously not consistently progressive: easier or simpler constructions are repeated further on, and more difficult ones are tentatively introduced early on and revisited later. This is once again meant to reproduce the variety and randomness of the natural text, but also to allow for reviewing and relaxation. Note that the presented arrangement of the texts is merely a suggestion: the student or teacher may opt for a different, individually suited sequence of work and rate of progress, or decide to skip texts for various reasons.

An asterisk (*) marks sections that may be skipped and revisited at a more advanced stage; in the Bibliography it marks reading recommended for advanced students.

(4) THE STRUCTURE OF THE ChRESTOMATHY. The first part consists of six units (I-VI) comprising 26 sections, and scans systematically and exhaustively the formal and basically functional phenomena relating to the noun syntagm (including Nominal Sentence patterns), the verb system (the base and durative conjugations, alias Tripartite and Bipartite, imperative, causative conjugation, etc.) as well as adverb predication. The converters are first introduced here in their full formal and main functional scope.

The second part of four units (VII-X), sections 27-51, revisits, in considerably complicating detail and better resolution, special topics chosen for their difficulty and/or their systemic significance: conversion; the conjunctive; conditional complexes; the extra-conjugalional infinitive.

The third part consists wholly of assorted texts of advanced syntax, arranged in ascending order of difficulty (complexity and extent, graded I-III) and assuming acquaintance with the first two parts. It is meant to consolidate and test the competence acquired earlier, by and combinatory reviewing of texts and by exposure to the full range of «facts or life» of la parole, such as redundance, anacoluthia and plain difficulty of construction. Here the student is to be weaned from specialization and the feeling of predictability, and is left on his own to identify and place grammatical "irregularities" and plumb new syntactic depths. Here, too,
his analytic sensitivity is put to the test by some texts in *scriptio continua*.

The textual parts are followed by the instruments of work and reference: **TABLES OF GRAMMATICAL AND LEXICAL MORPHOLOGY, GLOSSARIES** (lexemic, onomastic and morphemic), **INDEX TO THE GRAMM. NOTES, TERMINOLOGICAL GLOSSARY AND CORRESPONDENCE LIST, BIBLIOGRAPHY**.

(5) **TECHNICAL INFORMATION, EDITORIAL POLICY, TERMINOLOGY**

(a) **SECTION HEADINGS and INTRODUCTORY REMARKS** should be taken as no more than minimal general information considered requisite to tackle the following Coptic texts, and are not precise grammatical statement or resumes (reference to tables is assumed). The bibliographical references are selective (mostly to current grammars, textbooks or monographical treatments; suggestions for advanced reading are marked by an asterisk).

(b) The individual texts themselves may be followed by any or both of two types of mega-textual annotation:

  "NB": basic specific information requisite for dealing with the relevant text — bridging information gaps, often anticipating later illustration.

  "OBS." : notes of broader grammatical perspective or deeper import; some advance information; drawing attention to unexemplified features.

The annotation serves the additional purpose of anticipating further information; also of accustoming the student to alternative terminologies and statement formulations, from different aspects of the analysis. (I attribute great importance to this: the student should be made to realize at an early stage that terms are not "correct" or absolute, but always provisional, tentative and approximative.)

(c) The original **ORTHOGRAPHY** is as a rule not tampered with, with two exceptions: MS punctuation is not reproduced (except for some cases in Part III); the supralineation is standardized and "average". (No Western punctuation is used, save occasionally the full stop (.) to separate several illustrations of the same feature in one text and rarely three full stops (...) to mark absolutely unavoidable omissions).

(d) **MORPH-SEPARATING DASHES (-)** are introduced in the earlier parts of the chrestomathy when this is considered helpful, on early encounters of new morphs or in such syntagms as are especially complex or contain "elusive" affixes; their use is a function of the expected difficulty in isolating the affix and its environment as well as of the stage of progress. Consistency is here not aimed for, and always overruled by didactic considerations.
(e) **Terminology:** I have innovated rarely, and only in cases of a terminological vacuum, or when the existing/traditional terms are patently inadequate or misleading. Terminological definitions (or rather explanations) and English-German-French correspondences are listed at the end of the book. Acquaintance with other languages or a general (theoretical) linguistic basis is not presupposed, although this will prove a distinct advantage in many ways and is strongly recommended.

(f) **Glossary:** the lexical glossary combines native and Greek lexemes as well as the Proper Names in the following order (under each letter): Coptic — Greek — Proper Names. (See the Glossary Practice, which is also meant to practise the resolution of words into these classes).

(6) Here is a series of **guide-lines and practical suggestions** for the student, especially for the one who uses this chrestomathy by himself/herself, without the benefit of a teacher's guidance. **These should be read carefully before commencing the study of the texts.**

(a) Before starting, have a free-leaf notebook ready, in which you enter new grammatical information as you go along, arranged roughly by conventional textbook headings ("the Noun", "Nominal Sentence", "the Verb" — with subdivisions as required); index every single morph (also difficult lexical items!) you come across, referring them to the relevant pages in your "grammar". You will find this grammatical record, built up gradually and without omission, a worthwhile investment of effort: you will have a reliable grammatical sketch to use when stepping outside the scope of the chrestomathy to tackle new texts.

(b) **Read the texts aloud** at least twice — once before your analysis and translation of them, once afterwards.

(c) Read the notes (if any) only after you have done your best to analyse and translate the text without help. Consult the "NB" notes first, the "OBS." notes after completing the translation; if possible, look the bibliographical references up when you are at least half-way through the section.

(d) In the actual analysis, try to separate (a well-sharpened pencil is best for the purpose) the lexical from the grammatical component of an isolated string of elements; then subdivide the components of the grammatical "cluster" of elements, which will usually precede the lexical one, locating the grammatical units ("grammemes"), one by one, in the index. At the first stages of your progress, **make a point of always looking up the grammemes in the glossary — do not rely on your**
MEMORY. Full use of the Tables and Glossaries is presupposed: these are your instruments of study.

(e) Once you have isolated the lexical elements in your word or text, you will have to decide whether they are of Greek or native Coptic origin (there are two separate glossaries for each of these categories). If you are unfamiliar with Greek, make a note of the following terminations of lexemes, characteristic of the Greek element in Coptic: masculines -os (-ος), -on (-όν), -on (-όν), -fs (-φς) - eyel (-εύς), -ma (-μα); feminines -a (-α), -ia (-ια) - e (-ε), -is (-ις) - sis (-σες) for nouns: -e (-ε), -ei (-ει), -a (-α) and -ou (-ου) for verb lexemes. Greek-origin prepositions, particles, adverbs, conjunctions are relatively few; make a point of looking them up in the Greek glossary. (Note that the Greek lists (glossary and index) are combined, under each letter, in the following order: native elements — Greek elements — proper names); generally speaking, the "phonemic image" of the Greek element of the lexicon (and that of proper names) differs sharply from the native one, and with some practice you should have little trouble on that score. Consulting a Greek dictionary (the smaller or medium-sized Liddell-Scott will do) is suggested, when you acquire sufficient confidence in uncovering the grammatical structure of the material; the use of a special Patristic Greek dictionary (e.g. Lampe) is of course recommended.

(f) By Coptic lexicographical convention, the Coptic lexemes are arranged in the Glossary, as in Semitic, by radicals — i.e. first by consonants and only then by the alphabetic vowel sequence for every consonant. (NB: the semi-vowels u/w (γ, ου) and i/y (ι, ι) count as consonants (when they are radical) or vowels (when they are not). If you are unfamiliar with this system, invest some time in studying the Glossary and getting to understand why any given lexeme is where you find it. Following the alphabet, you will find a list of Greek-Coptic and Egyptian-Coptic Proper Names, nouns and verbs (occurring in the texts) for you to look up in the Glossary as a preliminary exercise. Again, note that the Greek elements follow the native Coptic ones under each letter in the Glossary; the Proper Names come last.

(g) Transitive verbs are entered in the Glossary under their absolute (object-less) infinitive form, which you will often be expected to reconstruct from the actual form in your text, where the verb may be combined with a nominal or pronominal direct object, or where you may have its stative (qualitative) form; consult Table I, and copy the "principal parts" of the verbs you isolate — absolute, pre-nominal ("construct") and pre-pronominal ("pronominal") infinitive as well as stative, if any.
(h) **DO NOT APPROXIMATE. NEVER COMPROMISE** and settle for a less than a formally and semantically satisfactory analysis and identification of entities. If you cannot identify one grammeme, try another; if you have unsuccessfully tried all, do not brood on the text you have found difficult (do not allot more than, say, twenty minutes to any single item in Part One) but proceed, returning to it after two or three texts. **START BY IDENTIFYING GRAMMATICAL ELEMENTS:** they are fewer and semantically more clear-cut than lexemes, and will help you decide whether to look for a noun or a verb in the Glossary.

(i) Although you may use the glossary for the whole course of the Chrestomathy, you should try and graduate to using a full-scale dictionary (Crum's *Coptic Dictionary* is best) as soon as possible — not, however, approximately before you master Part One. When using a dictionary and even our Glossary, never settle for the first meaning offered for the lexeme, but peruse the entry, accumulating meanings and subsequently deciding on the one most suiting your context. It is suggested you copy out the «principal parts» of verb lexemes into a list in your own grammatical sketch.

(j) If you work alone, try to proceed in the given order of texts. Do not skip unless you come up against some insurmountable difficulty with a text or feel you are familiar with the illustrated phenomena: the texts have been carefully selected and arranged with a view to illustrating in a reasoned order various essential aspects of grammar. **DO NOT RUSH!** Set yourself a quota of texts or time of study and do not exceed it. (Twice-weekly sessions is the lowest desirable frequency at early stages). If possible, proceed at a steady rate.

(k) For various reasons which cannot be enumerated here, I advise against freely consulting «grammatical opinion», i.e. using conventional or handy grammar-books or textbooks (beyond the “BIBLIOGRAPHY” recommendations), at least before a text-based “feeling of the language” and some degree of critical faculty are developed.

(7) Sahidic ("Dialect S") was the main and largely representative dialect of Coptic, the language of Egyptian Christendom and last phase of the Egyptian language, of which the main stages are (partly overlapping as spoken/written idioms):

(a) script: Hieroglyphic and its cursive form, Hieratic:
- Old Egyptian (from about 3000 B.C.)
- Middle Egyptian (from about 2000 B.C.)
- Late Egyptian (from about 1300 B.C.)
(b) Script: Demotic (very cursive Hieratic, often interlaced into groups): Demotic (Persian, Ptolemaic and Roman, from about 700 B.C.)
(c) Script: Coptic-Greek: Coptic (from the 3rd century A.D.; died out as a spoken language by the 17th century).

Other important dialects of Coptic are Bohairic ("B", centered in the Western Delta of the Nile), Oxyrhynchite ("M", for the dialect of "Middle Egypt" or "Mesokemic"), Achmimic ("A") and Subachmimic or Lycopolitan ("A²" or "L", the main dialect of the Nag Hammadi Gnostic library), Fayyumic ("F"), with some others and many subvarieties.

From the genetic point of view of language classification, Egyptian-Coptic constitutes a special group of its own. However, the striking affinities it shows with both Semitic and African (e.g. Berber) languages have led to the widely accepted postulation of a Hamito-Semitic or Afro-Asiatic common family (although the same affinities can be explained by language blending, rather than by genealogical descent).
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>NOUN</th>
<th>VERB</th>
<th>ADVERB</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>noun phrase: “the man”, “a man”, “Man”, “my brother” “the wise man”, “three men”, “Jesus the Saviour”, “a man and a woman”, “man and/or woman”, “to hear” “to make him hear” sections 1.1-2.3, 4, 9, 49-51</td>
<td>imperative: “Hear!” “Let him hear!” sections 8, 10</td>
<td>adverb phrase: “in the house”, “there”, “now”, “to me” “above”, “outside”, “why?” “where?” section 5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vocative: “O man!” section 1.1 (a)</td>
<td>existential present/future: “There is a man coming”, “There is a man about to come”; “No man is coming”, “No man is about to come” sections 15.2, 16.2, 17.2</td>
<td>existential adverb predication: “There is a man here”, “No man is here” section 19.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>existence: “There is a man”, “There is no man”; “Here is a man” sections 12-14</td>
<td>Conjugation Forms: “I heard/did not hear”, “The man heard/did not hear”; “Since you/ the man came”; “I am singing”, “The man is singing” “I am about to sing”; “She is good”, “He wishes”, “He said”; “Let him hear!”, “...and you shall hear” sections 6-7, 10-11, 15.1, 16.1, 17.1, 18, 23-6</td>
<td>adverbial predicate (present tense): “I am here”, “The man is here”; “He is like this”; “Woe to you!”, “Glory unto Him!” sections 19.1, 20-21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nominal Sentence: “He is a man”, “God is our help”, “You are our father”, “I am a sinner”, “His name is Paul”, “The root of all evil is pride”, “It is he” sections 3.1-3.4</td>
<td>CIRCUMSTANTIAL CONVERSION (sections 27-30): annexing a predicate to a pronoun, noun or verb: “the man/a man/he going”, “He went crying”, “Having come, he...”</td>
<td>&quot;SECOND TENSE&quot; CONVERSION (sections 34-38): &quot;that...&quot; as in &quot;It is to you that I have come&quot;: emphasizing (focussing) various elements of the clause</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RELATIVE CONVERSION (sections 31-33): adjoining a clause to a definite noun: “the man who heard” “the man whose face I am watching”, “he about whom we say”</td>
<td>PRETERITE CONVERSION (sections 39-41): marking in narrative a change in &quot;step&quot; or tempo; marking anteriority, shift to the past, remote wish or condition</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## THE ALPHABET

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Letter</th>
<th>Transliteration &amp; Approx. Phonic(*)</th>
<th>Numeric Value</th>
<th>Contemporary Name</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Α</td>
<td>a (as in French avoir)</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>Alpha</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Β</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>Beta</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Γ</td>
<td>g</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>Gamma</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Δ</td>
<td>d</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>Dalda</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ε</td>
<td>e (as in men, French elle)</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>Ei</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ζ</td>
<td>z</td>
<td>6</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Η</td>
<td>η (as in main, German ch; not diphthong)</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>Zeta</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Θ</td>
<td>θ (comb.) t + h (hothouse)</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>Theta</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ι</td>
<td>i (as in sheet)</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>Iota</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Κ</td>
<td>k</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>Kappa</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Λ</td>
<td>l</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>Lauda, Lola</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Μ</td>
<td>m</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>Mi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ν</td>
<td>n</td>
<td>50</td>
<td>Ni</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ξ</td>
<td>ξ (comb. k + s)</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>Xi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ο</td>
<td>o (as in French note)</td>
<td>70</td>
<td>Ou</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Π</td>
<td>p</td>
<td>80</td>
<td>Pi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ρ</td>
<td>r</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>Ro</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Σ</td>
<td>s</td>
<td>200</td>
<td>Simma</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Τ</td>
<td>t</td>
<td>300</td>
<td>Tau</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Υ, Ω</td>
<td>υ, ω (as in foot)</td>
<td>400</td>
<td>He</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Φ</td>
<td>φ (comb.) p + h (haphazard)</td>
<td>500</td>
<td>Phi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Χ</td>
<td>χ (comb.) k + h (backhold)</td>
<td>600</td>
<td>Khi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ψ</td>
<td>ψ (comb.) p + s (apse)</td>
<td>700</td>
<td>Psi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ω</td>
<td>ω (as in door)</td>
<td>800</td>
<td>O</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(Of Egyptian Origin:)

| Ψ | ψ (as in ship) | Shai |
| Ψ | ρ (as in ship) | 90 | Fai |
| Ω | h (as in house) | Hori |
| Ω | j (as in jam) | Djam |
| Ω | c (as in chalk or bookyear) | Chima |
| Ω | t (comb.) t + i (as in teen) | Ti |

(*) Of practical value only (e.g. for reading out the texts); Standard Southern British equivalents.
The superlinear stroke is written above a consonant (esp. one of the sonorants \( \lambda \), \( \mu \), \( \nu \), \( \rho \), \( \sigma \); in the manuscripts, above a consonant or a group of consonants), to indicate its syllabic status (i.e. that it forms a syllable or a syllable peak by itselfs): \( \text{μ\text{-}τ} \) \( \text{β\text{-}ψ} \) \( \text{κ\text{-}ψ} \) \( \text{τ\text{-}μ\text{-}τ\text{-}μ\text{-}τ\text{-}ρ\text{-}π} \) "the testimony". Note that printed editions sometimes do not attempt to reproduce the superlinear stroke in the manuscript. In the Chrestomathy, only the syllabic peak (center) is marked with the superlinear stroke.
GLOSSARY PRACTICE

Look up the following verbs, nouns and Proper Names (Egyptian- Coptic and Greek-Coptic intermixed) in the Glossary, and copy the words and meanings given into your notebook.

Note:
(1) under each letter of the alphabet, the native words come first (arranged by their consonantal “skeleton”); then the ones of Greek origin; then the Proper Names, both last arranged in the European fashion, by vowels and consonants.
(2) In Greek words, ignore an initial 2 before a vowel as regards its assignment to a letter: that is, look for 2e under e, 2o under o and so on.
(3) For some native words you will find more than one entry in the Glossary: copy all meanings given.

λαε
αβ
πωτ
μελος
καζ
με
κω
απε
ζελπις
παγλος
βαωορ
ρωμε
ασεβς
ρινε
σωτπ
2ε
2ητ
4ωτε
πλαςς
2αζ
†

αω
με
ζηκε
οργΗ
βινε
αρχει
ωμο
ωμω
καπι
σμογ
κρινε
σοογν
ογα
θρονος
ζοογτ
ζοβολος
κογι
κρονος
ωιρε
σεερε
μογογτ
γι
ταλο
 Zeusmwn
αμητε
θαλασσα
ποιηε
θεισιε
εοο
και
γοτε
ψενογοτε
ζωον
ραμε
παρθενος
τωσβε
κωσμε
δροομπε
εολας
ψερπυ
γαιν
μετανοει
κας
σφαγιε
FIRST PART (Units I-VI, Sections 1-26):
THE FORMAL/FUNCTIONAL SYSTEM

(The noun phrase, adverb phrase; Nominal Sentence, verb system, adverb predication)
PART ONE:
UNIT (I): THE NOUN PHRASE (NOUN & VERB LEXEMES);
THE NOMINAL SENTENCE: THE PROPER NAME; THE ADVERB PHRASE
(sections 1-5)

1.1 The determinators: articles, demonstratives, possessive pronoun and article
1.1.1 Inherent (inalienable) possession
1.2 The attributive group (the noun expanded by ːn-)
1.3 The possessive group (the noun expanded by ːn, ːn+ə-
1.4 Apposition
1.5 Quantifiers; number names

2.1 Noun coordination ("... and ...")
2.2 Noun disjunction ("... or ...")
2.3 Noun reiteration

3. The Nominal Sentence: clauses predicating a pronoun or noun syntagm
3.1 The *interlocutive* pattern: # interlocutive (1st-2nd persons: "I/we, you") pronominal subject + noun-syntagm predicate #
3.1.1 The *interlocutive* subject topicalized
3.1.2 The *interlocutive* pattern, converted

3.2 The *delocutive* pattern: # nominal/pronominal predicate + delocutive (3rd persons: "he, she, (they)") pronominal subject #
3.2.1 The *delocutive* subject expanded and specified by an appositive noun
3.2.2 The *delocutive* subject topicalized
3.2.3 The *delocutive* pattern, converted

3.3 The *copular* pattern: # nominal/pronominal subject + copula + nominal predicate #
3.3.3 The *copular* pattern, converted

3.4 Assorted patterns combined
(*) 3.5 Some special Nominal Sentence patterns
(*) 4 The Proper Name: selected special constructions

5. The adverb phrase
1.1 THE DETERMINATORS: articles, demonstrative pronouns, possessive articles and pronouns (Table A1-A4)

(a) The definite article: "the..." (\(\pi\), \(\tau\), \(\varphi\))
(b) The indefinite articles: "a...", "some..." (\(\alpha\gamma\), \(\epsilon\gamma\))
(c) The zero article
(d) ...\(\nu\nu\nu\) "every...", "any..."
(e) The 'near' demonstrative: "this" (\(\pi\alpha\), \(\pi\epsilon\))
(f) The 'remote', affective demonstrative: "that" (\(\pi\eta\), \(\pi\iota\))
(g) The possessive article: "my, your, his/her..." (etc.) (\(\pi\alpha\), \(\pi\epsilon\kappa\), \(\pi\omega\gamma\), \(\pi\epsilon\kappa\)...
(h) The possessive pronoun: "mine, yours, his/her..." (etc.), "(the) one pertaining to..." (\(\pi\omega\iota\), \(\pi\omega\kappa\), \(\pi\omega\), \(\pi\omega\kappa\), \(\pi\omega\kappa\), \(\pi\omega\kappa\), \(\pi\omega\kappa\), \(\pi\kappa\), \(\pi\alpha\), \(\pi\tau\), \(\pi\alpha\))

NB: (1) the definite articles have an alternant vocalized form: \(\pi\epsilon\) (masc.), \(\tau\epsilon\) (fem.), \(\nu\epsilon\) (plur.), before a double consonant (consonant cluster) or certain time-expressing nouns; the plural def. article \(\nu\nu\nu\) assimilates to a subsequent labial, taking the form \(\varphi\).

(2) Many nouns have a regular plural form, e.g. \(\alpha\omega\\nu\) "work" vs. \(\alpha\omega\\nu\) "works" or \(\alpha\nu\) "horse" vs. \(\alpha\nu\) "horses".

(3) A very small class of nouns has a regular feminine sex form, e.g. \(\alpha\gamma\nu\) "brother" vs. \(\alpha\gamma\nu\) "sister" or \(\pi\rho\) "king" vs. \(\pi\rho\) "queen".

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN parr: 226-241 (a-c), 272 (d), 242-249 (c-f), 250-253 (g-h), 199-207 (gender, number); STEINDORFF parr: 136-137 (a), 140-141 (b), 142-143 (c), 88-89 (c-f), 85-87 (g-h), 92-94 (gender, number); TILL parr: 87-91, 94-99 (a), 92-93, 100-102 (b), 103-108 (c), 231 (d), 201-202 (c-f), 203-206 (g-h); VEGGOTE parr: 121-122, 124-125 (a), 123-125 (b, c), 127-128 (c-f), 136-137 (g-h); LAMBIDIN parr. 1.3, 17.2 (a), 2.1-2.2 (b-c), 4.2, 5.2, 30.8 (c-f), 16.2 (d), 4.1, 22.2 (g-h), 1.1-1.2 (gender, number); POLOTSKY, Rev. TILL p. 229 f. (f); *SHISHA-HALEVY, chapter 5 (gender, determination)

(a)

\(\pi\alpha\gamma\kappa\epsilon\nu\epsilon\). \(\delta\nu\alpha\nu\tau\eta\nu\nu\). \(\epsilon\nu\nu\kappa\nu\nu\kappa\nu\nu\). \(\alpha\rho\nu\nu\). \(\pi\nu\nu\nu\). \(\tau\nu\nu\nu\). \(\nu\nu\nu\). \(\nu\nu\nu\). \(\nu\nu\nu\). \(\nu\nu\nu\). \(\nu\nu\nu\). \(\nu\nu\nu\). \(\nu\nu\nu\). \(\nu\nu\nu\). \(\nu\nu\nu\).

{NB: \(\pi\rho\nu\nu\nu\) plural of \(\pi\rho\); \(\varphi\) = \(\nu\nu\) before the labials \(\pi\) \(\mu\)\}

[OBS. The vocative (addressed) noun is as a rule definite]
(b) οὐσκε, οὐσών, οὐσάκων, οὐσάκωμα, οὐσάκωνα, οὐσάκως, οὐσάκως.

{NB: ἀνύων “single”}

[OBS. ζενκατασάφε: note the indefinite determination of a prepositional phrase: “some that are...”]

(c) ἑνεργείνος: (ἢ-)ναντ. (ἢ-)εἰρην. (ἢ-)ἀναγ. (ἢ-)σώμ. (ἢ-)τις.

{NB: the auxiliary verbs ἠ- “be, become”, “make”; ὃ- “give”, “cause”; ἔ- “take”. ὄψι-/*ή- “there is/there is not” (sections 12-14)}

(d) τίς εἰμι. σμοῦ εἰμι ἄρειν εἰμι ταῖς εἰμι. ἵντ-ἀτ-σώμι εἰμι.

(ε) πείτοπος: νεώπος. ζητείρομεν ταί. νείρωμε: θείης.

[OBS. οὔτειμε: πείτειμε: indefinite articles specified by τείμε]
1.1.1 INHERENT (intimate or "inalienable") POSSESSION expressed by a suffix pronoun following a special presuffixal (possessed) forms of a special class of nouns (esp. parts of the body).

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 195-198; Stein dorff parr. 81-2; Till parr. 188; Vergote parr. 130(6), 131; Lambdin parr. 28.6, 29.4; Layton, "Compound Prepositions"

πω-φ. τοτ-κ. 2θυ. 2θν. 2θτ. ωντφ. τοτ. φντογ. χω. χωντε

{NB: 2θν precedes a zero (2nd person sgl. feminine) suffix pronoun; τοτ: -τ "my" is zeroed after the final τ of the presuffixal form of the noun; φντ - see pan}

Sources for 1.1 & 1.1.1:
III 19, 27, 45, 46, 47, 63, 64, 66, 70, 72, 73, 77, 90, 93, 96, 114, 115, 123, 119, 160, 166, 184, 191, 196, 219, 221; IV 4, 27, 32, 46, 61, 64, 67f., 82, 83, 94, 106, 119, 162, 180, 184, 187, 194; Ch 19, 20, 21, 27, 62, 63, 66, 67, 72, 78, 81, 86, 97; Or. 153, 155, 158, 159, 160, 161, 162, 163, 167; Wess. 9 118, 148, 171, 174; RE 10 159, 161, 162; RE 11 17; A I 246; A II 341, 442; Cat. 42, 43; Leyd. 345, 369; E 66; Gol.

1.2 THE ATTRIBUTIVE PHRASE: the noun expanded by n- + zero-determinated noun. This construction expresses the characterization of one noun by the quality or kind of another; while n- is roughly equivalent to English "of" (or French "de"), the construction on the whole corresponds to "adjective + noun" in English or German.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 183-188; Stein dorff parr. 147-150; Till parr. 114-119, 122; Vergote par. 189 (1-6); Lambdin parr. 15.1, 16.1, 23.2; *Shisha-Halevy, Chapter 4
1. ὤψαξε ἄνσωρ. ὤψαξε ἄνοιγμα (P 130.2 101 ro)
2. ὁ κύρῳ ἔως (IV 15) {NB: ἐκα = πνεύμα}
3. ὁ γνώσω ἐκκόλου ὁ γνώσω (IV 206)
4. γενήσαμεν ὑπόθεκτος ὑπόθεκτος (III 172) {NB: - = - before π Φ μ}
   [OBS. πτότος: the Greek masculine form of Greek-origin adjectives
   is used in Coptic for animates, both masculine and feminine]
5. γαὰρ ἀραὶς (IV 89)
6. ὁ γνώσω ἐκκόλου (Gol.)
7. ἡγεῖσθαι τηρεῖ ἡμᾶς ὑπάκους (Gol.)
8. γενήσαμεν ἄροφος (IV 59)
9. ἀς γισθετ (III 63)
10. ὁ γνώσω ἡσεβοῦσ· πρεποῖσκος ἡγεῖσθαι (III 221)
11. δωκέ-κοι ἐκπειτ (IV 117)
12. ἡπεκοῖν ἐκθω ἀν (III 45)
13. ὁ γνώσω ἄνσωρ (Ch. 97)
14. ὁ γνώσω ἄργελος (Ch. 34)
15. ἡπικαὶ ἐκρυπτούσος ἡπούμε (Ch. 70)
16. ἡπειραθὲ ἐκακε (III 70)
17. ἡπειρία ἡγριον (P 131.5 64 vo)
18. πκαὶ ἰπέθ-τ-καπετος (IV 186)
19. τεπείσστ ἰπροφίτης (III 62)
20. ὁ πτικός ἵβαζ (Or. 154)
21. ὁγορίη ἱέρον ἰδο (E 70) {NB: ἅρ- ἱ- "What kind of...?"
22. ἡγείσαμεν ἡστατολος ἐστ ῤπροφίτης (III 106)
23. γενός ἐλ ἰελαλλ ά-γαρπετοκος (Ch. 179)
   {NB: 21- coordinates ("and") zero-determined nouns (section
   2.1.)}
24. ὁγορίη ἐκποίησος ἰπρομέ (Ch. 21)
   [OBS. note that in a certain affective tone it is the quality-expressing
   ("adjective") constituent of the attributive phrase that precedes]
25. ἡγεῖσθαι ἵερος ἱφω ἔκκαιον (III 64)
26. γαὰρ ἐκκόλος ἓντεσ ἵφω ἵφων (III 137) {NB: ἵφων = ἄτ-
   ὅτα}
27. γενήσαμεν ἡστατοβ θαθακαιος (III 171)
28. ποινος ἵερος ἰπέταμον (Ch. 83)
29. παπα ἐκκατοί (Ch. 56)
30. πασαθαρτος ἔκκαικατος (III 26)
31. ἦθανομος Ἐφαρμαγες ἰπροντερος 21ἰγκακατος ἰφαρκαὶος (Ch. 122)
32. ὁγεῖστ ἀραῖς ἱφω ἰφω ἴνσεβος ἕνομε (Ch. 111)
33. οὐρώμε Μπαρανομος Νατνα Ντεφτωρπ Νακαθαρτος Ντροφ Νεταλλην (Ch. 191)
34. Τεκκαλασία Μιν-Ντεφτ-Ουγειν Νπενιειτ Νατιτατος Αγω 
Ναμαραγος Ναπχιεπικοπος Κυριαλος (III 88f.)
35. Νειμινε Ντρώμε (IV 82)
36. Νειμιντσοβ Ντειμινε (III 32)
37. Ογκαταρω-τη Ντρώμε (III 117)
(NB: καταρε - the presuffixal or pronominal form of the preposition κατα-)
[OBS. ο replaces o in open syllables: καταρω-τη]
38. Πουντ Νυγ-ενες (IV 4)
(NB: ωγες, a prepositional phrase, is here used attributively like any noun)
39. Νειαουλον Νυγε Μην-ωμε (III 143)
(NB: Μην- coordinates ("and") definite and indefinite nouns (section 2.1))
[OBS. The article η- in ηωμε resumee ηειαουλον: "the [...] of -"]
40. Κεεε Νηινε Μινε (III 51)
(NB: Мине Мине a reiterated noun (2.3), expressively used for "every")

1.3 THE POSSESSIVE PHRASE: the noun expanded by
(a) Νι- + definite/indefinite noun
(b) Ντε- + definite/indefinite noun, Ντα- + suffix pronoun

Constructions (a) and (b) are selected according to the determination and expansion of the first noun (nucleus). While both correspond to the English genitive and "of", expressing possession and appurtenance, Ντε- seems to express appurtenance rather than possession where both occur after similarly determinated nouns.

(a) [π-/ογ-] Νι- [π-/ογ-]
(b) [ογ-/θ-] Ντε- [π-/ογ-]
 [π- ...] Ντε- [π-/ογ-]

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 292-297; Steindorff parr. 148, 156; Till parr. 111-113, 122, 207;
Vergote parr. 190 (1-2); Lambdin parr. 2.3, 15.1, 22.1
THE FORMAL-FUNCTIONAL SYSTEM

(a)

[π-τ-ṉ-/οὐ-zenia-] + ṅ- + [π-τ-ṉ-/οὐ-zenia-]

1. πνήμα ῶπεξε (Ch. 95)
   (NB: ῶπεξε = πεξικτος: “sacred names” are orthographically abbreviated and marked with a longer superlinear stroke)

2. παρογς ῶπνουτε (RE 10 160)

3. πεξαξ ῶγενύμφρε ῶγιν (A I 246)

4. ῶγεσα ῶγυγης (P 130.2 4 p. 84)

5. ῶγησόγ ῶγεπρω (IV 53)

6. πογωγ ῶπεξης (III 140)

7. τῆος ῶπεκροοῦ (E 57)

8. ῶγυγξε ῶγεπρίν-πνουτε (A II 486)

9. τῆος ῶπεξάλις ῶπξοει (III 151)

10. ῶγησογ ῶγκακε (Leyd. 296)
    (NB: ῶγησογ plural of ῶσο)

11. ῶβιξ ῶγογρικε ῶναβε (IV 127)

12. ῶγηρ τηρογ ῶπνουτε (Ch. 67)
    [OBS. Note that the reinforcer τηρ - follows its noun immediately, preceding any other expansion]

13. τήος ῶμάντε (III 184)
    [OBS. ῶμάντε, being a Proper Name, is not determined]

14. ῶγησόγγε ῶγεκβω ῶγεγαζε (III 125)
    (NB: ῶγησόγγε plural of ῶσο)

(b)

[οὐ-zenia-/θ/-π-τ-ṉ-+] + ῶτες- + [π-τ-ṉ-/οὐ-zenia-] + ῶτα-

1. οὐχογ ῶτεπξοεις (E 88)

2. οὐχηιδωσ ῶτεγηζεζος (III 143)

3. ῶγησνογ ῶτεπξαζ (P 131.6 44 115)

4. οὐχηεαζωσ ῶτεηπιος (III 27)
    (NB: κε- “other” follows the determinators but precedes the lexeme (section 1.5))

5. ῶσες- ῶβη- ῶσω οὔηνογ (IV 30)

6. οὐχοεκοδομίς ῶτεγενύμφρε ῶγιν (A II 433)

7. ῶγηρ ῶτεπξοεις. ῶγηρ ῶτεπξαζ (III 75)

8. (we do not hear) ε-ῥεογ ῶταγ (III 203)
    (NB: ε- preposition governed by σωμ “hear”)

9. οὐχεχερε ῶγιν ῶταγ (Cat. 42)

10. οὐχαλ ῶτεογήζαλ ῶταγ (III 36)

11. ἱπ ῶιμ ῶιμ οὔηνος (IV 195)
12. ζημαγ γιμ ἦταγ (III 173)
13. ἡγακε ἀε ετογαα ἦτεπάθοεις (IV 126)
   {NB: ετογαα relative present, "which (are) holy" (section
      16.1.1)}
14. γενκατακαπτ ηταγ (III 136)

1.4 APPPOSITION: one noun (or determined element) specifying
another by following it, with no other means of connecting the two. A
common noun describing a Proper Name, a Proper Name identifying and
naming a common noun; a common noun or Proper Name explicating a
personal pronoun; a demonstrative pronoun repeated; appositive
attributes: ψημ, κογι "little", "small". Fixed Greek terminological
expressions.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern par. 483; Steindorff par. 144; Till parr. 110; Vergote par. 188

1. αβελ παικαιος. ζακαριας πνημη νεωραχιας (III 103)
2. αλεξαναρς πνημωμην (III 32)
3. πνισιας πιερεβικα τημαγ γιακως (IV 27)
4. μανις πατνογε τιμανιχαιος (A I 194)
5. πενακοις εις πενεις γιω τεμαγ γηακως (IV 129)
   {NB: εις = ἰνσονς} 
6. πεμεριτ νιοις νεοφιλεστατος απα τιμοθεος (III 14)
7. πρωςε ναγαυς αθαναος παρθηπηκοπος (III 108)
8. πεσιρο πεκτε (Ch. 122)
   {NB: πεκτε = πεκτητος}
9. τειρομη τας (III 219)
   {OBS. an appositive demonstrative, meaning "this very ..."}
10. πευον πιεβολ 2ιτι-πρωςε (III 35)
   {OBS. πευολ the def. article determining an adverb phrase: "the
      one (that is) from ..."}
11. ω πρωςε γιω ντο 2ωςτε τεκτιμη (Or. 153)
   {NB: 2ωςτε: 2nd person sgl. fem. form of the reinforcer 2ωω} 
12. γυμειας παι (E 82)
13. πευναγιως παεςνα (Or. 160)
   {NB: παεςνα: N- introduces a number name apposition}
14. ογκαπατμα κογι (Leyd. 345)
15. τυμτηνετε ψημ (Ch. 14)
16. πεφιμαζαλ ψημ (Z 246 75)
17. ἰκογὶ ςωμ ἵνσωγγ (of life; Ryl. 71 91)
   [OBS. note that ςωμ has precedence over an ἰ- introduced attributive
   (or possessive) expansion]
18. ἀνοκ πιεβην (III 137)
19. ἀνον ἰμοναχος (Ch. 56)
20. τκαεολικ εκκλησια (E 84)
   {NB: this is a fixed combination, imported "ready-made" from the
   Greek and following the rules of Greek syntax; so too in texts 21-2)
21. τεπλατονικ διακεκαλια (A I 15)
22. τπαλαια μιν-τκαιιν διακεκ (A II 244)
23. ἀνον χερεειτιανος (Ch. 160)
24. ἵτωτη ω ἵκαιρετικος (III 47)
25. ἵτωτη а ек ἱλακε ἤτοε (III 86)
26. ω πυγμε ἱλακε πεβαλ γυπκακε πνακε (E 94)
27. αεξε ει πενκοεικ аγω πενκωτιρ πνοητε αγω πυγμε
   ἱλακε (Ch. 83)

1.5 QUANTIFICATION

{ kep-, χενκε-
   "another ...", "other ..." (plural)
{ -κε-
   [π-, πει-, πεικ-]κε-
   "the/this/his other ...", "also the/this/his..."

Cardinal numbers:  ὁγ-, ὁγ- ... ὅνωτ
   "one ..."
   ... σιαγ/σιτε
   "two ..." (masc./fem.)
   number + ἰ- + zero noun from 3 onward.
   ... οιμ
   "any ...", "every ..."

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 270-271, 277-283, 486; Steindorff parr. 158, 166-168; Till parr.
162-164, 225, 227-230; Vergote parr. 147-152, Lambdin parr. 4.3, 15.3, 16.5

1. κεποκνηρον (RE II 18)
2. χεκκερκωγ (III 68)
3. χεκκεμα (RE 10 164)
4. χεκκαερκ (RE II 15)
5. (She misleads not only the fools,) ἀλαλ ακεκτεεγ on (Or. 153)
6. (She became a cause of transgression) νακ αε μαγαλα-κ αλαλ
   ακεκτεεγ on (Or. 166)
   {NB: ἐα = pronominal form of the "dative" preposition ἰ-;
   μαγαλα = reinforcer or augens)
[OBS. an negates the adverb μακαρις]
7. τατσού νοησεικ νογωτ (Or. 162)
8. ηντεκαλλα (i.e. the Testament; Ch. 74)
9. μημταν-βερελπικ μηγι νεα-κεπεργυ (III 136)
   {NB: μημταν “we do not have” (section 13.2)}
10. πελα σκαγ μπεινντ-κεινωτ (III 118)
11. ογγαλε γηκερπερμε γιμε (Α II 245)
12. πειγενος σκαγ (III 219)
13. ξογ νεροπολος (Or. 162)
14. γω νακλακλωτος (III 71)
15. γωμμτ γεμοτ (III 69)
16. γεντεμωνε νεροπε. σε νεροπε (III 219)
17. μημτ νοεικ κεινωτ (III 73)
18. τανο μη-κακοκ νυε μη-κοογ ντελα νγομμτ (III 71)
19. ικε γω εκκι μηπεκκεειστ λακε (Ch. 75)
20. κακοκ νεκαιν (III 69)
21. πκεογα (Ch. 166)
22. νεικοογε (Ch. 83)
23. κεζουβ νογωτ (Ch. 160)
24. ογγητ νογωτ. ογκωμα νογωτ. ογκωνα νογωτ. ογκωβω
   νογωτ. ογκικτοκ νογωτ. ογκογε νογωτ (Ch. 153)
25. κεμακανος πκοκεσ γτερμ γω πεκκεκον (Ch. 108)
26. ρωμε νιμ (Ch. 151)
27. ογ μονον γη-νεπεκκακακα γω νεκτοπος μημα νιμ...
   άιι γηνακειν ον άιομ μηκεπομπε γω νεπειτε
   μηκεποχυ (Ch. 159)
   {NB: ογ μονον (Greek) “not only”}
28. (You love) ιναπ νιμ γμε (Ch. 85)
   {NB: η- preposition marking the direct object}
29. (Not just) ρωμε ογτε ηρκεγελος γω βομ νιμ (Ch. 136)
30. ογον νιμ (Ch. 86)
31. (Who does not differ from His Father) γδομ νιμ γκοογ νιμ γι-
   ιται νιμ γκακταν ον γικακτανη ον γκακταρακος
   νιμ γικακταρακος νιμ (Ch. 118)

2.1 COORDINATION (“... and ...”)
   
   (a) definite/indefinite noun + γω (“also”) + definite/indefinite noun
   (b) definite/indefinite noun + μη- (“with”) + definite/indefinite noun
   (c) indefinite/zero det. noun + γι- (“on”) + zero-determined noun
   (d) noun + noun (juxtaposition: asyndetic coordination, esp. in lists).
BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stearn parr. 552, 559, 591-592; Steindorff parr. 179, 181, 413; Till parr. 374-377; Vergote par. 178; Lambdin par. 30.11(a)

(a)
1. ἥψερε ςιν αὐῳ ἕψετε ςιν (Wess. 9 149a-b)
2. ὁψερε αὐῳ ἕκαρε κάτε (III 97)
3. ἀλεξανδρὸς πηγεμων αὐῳ ὁ πηγεμων (III 32)
4. ἥψερε ἔτεγωη αὐῳ πκακε (RE II 17)
5. τῶς νῦ αὐῃ αγαθον νῦ (IV 21)
6. πρῳμε ἄλκαθαρτος αὐῳ τεςίμε νύλομοκ (Or. 167)
7. ὅγειωτ αὐῳ ϊνυμαυ (Or. 158)
8. ἅςε νήγασολε ἐννυγοεῖτε αὐῳ ὄγινςο ἐννυγςε (Or. 167)
   (NB: ἅςε ἅ- "in the manner of", "like ...", "as ...")
9. ὃ πρῳμε αὐῃ ὃτο ττωτε τεςίμε (Or. 154)
   [OBS. The personal pronoun is coordinated by αὐῳ, i.e. in construction (a)]

(b)
1. πεζοοο μῆτεγγίη (III 113)
2. νπορφίτης μῆνηποςτολος (IV 32)
3. ὑαξε νῦ μῆςον νῦ μῆςαθον (III 113)
4. πεζα μήνεσου μήνεςακαμ μῆτεσβομ (III 52)
5. μδιαογα μήνεσου αὑῳ ἕηαε μήνεσου μήνετωςμ μήνηβαλμε (III 70)
6. ςγορχ μήνογβωπ μήνογβλύςμ μήγωανςμ (Ch. 47)
7. ττεςε μῆςεςω (IV 176)
   (NB: τεςεω = τ-ςεω)
8. μάγα μήνηκακσ (IV 27)
9. ἅραν αὐῳ νεκχμα μήνηκλομ (IV 3)
10. εὔαλα μαγάκ μήκεςο ἅοο ἅςίμε (IV 62)
11. ἄζεχάπ αἱμενήτων μήζεκκος μήζενσοςτε (Wess 9 151a)
   (NB: -τ-: auxiliary verbs, here indefinite infinitives ("cases of..."))
12. μῆςε αὐῳ ἀβραακ μῆςαακ μήνηκακσ μήνηενιοτε κτρου
   (P 130.2 5 85)
13. μηλαο μήνηλοι κτρου (IV 115)

(c)
1. σωμα γίσχομ (Cat. 43)
2. παν γίσχμα (IV 3)
3. μὴ τὰλαχείς τι ζώαζομ 2ινοβνεῖ (III 192)
4. ἡλικός ἦκωτετ τι ζώωολες 2ικάκε 2ιρίμε 2ιβοζέζ
   ἰννοβεί 2ικό 2ιείμε 2ινκεανάγυ (RE 11 16)
   {NB: τήτ = χήτ}
   [OBS. Note the alternation 2ι-μήτ- regulated by the determination]
5. ἤφωμε 2ερεκοίπυχν ἦσθε ἤθε 2ισερεμ 2ικόσεν 2ικσε (IV 21)
6. 2αγον 2ιν 2ιβωντε 2ιν (P. 130.2 5 85)
7. (you shall not lack) ἰοεῖκ 2ιόειτε 2ιαλλά ἰν]<i>κα</i> ἐπηρφο
   ἰντε-πκάζ (III 205)
8. (Would that I could find) ἰνινοῦτε ἰνσετ τι 2ινοβε 2ιζομέν
   τιβαρστ (III 111)
   {NB: ἰ- (ninoUtε) preposition marking the direct object}
9. ῥενός 2ι 2ιζήλαλης 2ιςαρκετικός (Ch. 179)
10. ἡρρε μίτεν ἦμι 2ιςοββ ζι πιςοοού 2ιμεπιθυρια 2ιμ
    ἰνσαρκίκον (IV 118)
    {NB: πιςοοού “that is evil”, circumstantial present (sections 16.1.1,
    27.1) describing 2ιςοββ 2ιμ}
    [OBS. σαρκίκον the Greek neuter form of Greek-origin adjectives
    is used in Coptic for inanimates]
11. 2μεσαραξά 2ειςε 2ιςτο (P 130.2 86ρο)
    2ιςωμε 2ιςομε (A 1 381)
    [OBS. χεν- brackets 2ιςε 2ιςωμε “(people) characterized by...”]
12. 2ομήν 2ιςιςε 2ιςρος 2ινττάκε 2ιςοοού 2ιπει-αἰων 2ιτάπατη
    2ινττριάδο (III 205)

(d)

1. 2ειςμετρίσης 2ειςοούν 2ειςκοςμής 2ειςεντολή ο财政部
    2ειςμετρής ταμος 2ειςεκεβηγει 2ιμοείς (III 206)
2. 2ειςπροφήτης 2ειςεγαργειαν 2ειςποστολος 2ειςγραφη
    2ειςαμώων 2ειςκαθήςις 2ιτεποτογαλε 2ειςωαξε 2ιςεναν-
    2ειςαμώογ (III 207)
    {NB: 2ειςαμώων “that are numerous”, circumstantial Adjective
    Verb (section 22.5). 2ειςαμώο γα “they that are holy”, plural definite
    relative present (16.1.1, 31.1)}
3. 2ειςκαρπάρος 2ειςκουνε 2ειςκοται 2ειςτριάδο 2ειςπαρμ-
    2ειςκατανάς 2ειςιδιομον ά2ιςιξαλον 2ειςκαθαρτον
    2ειςωκή 2ειςιγοαγε 2ειςπαρμος ινοβε 2ιν (III 205)
2.2 DISJUNCTION ("[either] ...or...", "[neither] ...nor...", "whether... or..."): ἡ (..., ἡ), οὐάξε (... οὐάξε), οὔτε (... οὔτε), εἰτε ...

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern par. 593, 595; Till par. 377; Vergote par. 178.

1. πεσεων ἔσωβηρ (III 52)
2. ὄγαγελος ὁ ὕππα ὑπεντούγετε (III 214)
3. (Do not call this book) νομος ἡ υάξε ἡ νεβω 2εντολή (III 192)
4. ηι την κικοουγε (IV 2)
5. πευκρηψ ἡ τεγγοτε ὁ ογιναγ (IV 113)
6. εἰτε ζοογτ εἰτε ζηνε (IV 154, and often)
7. (What are we all) εἰτε ἰγρο εἰτε αρχων εἰτε πηνμα εἰτε ἑκε εἰτε οὐνβ εἰτε ογον νημ ζιογον (Leyd. 362)
8. (They do not perform) ημα-τεχρια ημεσωμα οὐαε ηα-τεψγγχ (III 115)
   {NB: η- direct object marker}
9. (Let us not cut off) ηζεμηοβ ηωοοετε οὐτε νοβ ηκλατος (IV 73)
   {NB: κλατος = κλαδος}
10. μη-κακια ουτε κως ουτε μοστε ουτε χι ηδονες ιολως ἐγα-παγητ (III 138)
    {NB: μη- negates existence (or affirms non-existence): "there is not" (section 12.2); ἐγα- assimilated form of the preposition ἐγα-}
11. ηπη ἀν ογαες ησυ κικοογε ετςαψγγωγ (IV 94)
    {NB: ετςαψγγωγ "that are numerous", relative adjective verb (section 22.5)}
    {OBS. ἀν, ογαε negative the nouns ἐπη, ἐσυ, κικοογε}
12. τεψγγχ αε ὁν ἀγω πσωμα ἡ προε με τηπ (III 214)
13. ογικτταχε η θενωαξε ημιντταχε (III 194)

2.3 NOUN REITERATION

(a) Of definite nouns: "every ...", "any ..."
(b) Of indefinite/zero det. nouns: "... by ...", (adverbal)
(c) Of zero-determinated nouns (the whole following in an attributive phrase): "of every ...", "of all sorts of ...

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern par. 273; Steindorff par. 145; Till par. 109; Shisha-Halevy par 1.3.3
FIRST PART

(a)

1. ποιά ποιά κατα-τεφμε (III 110)
2. (See each other) ἢ-πναγ πναγ μὴ-πεζοῦν πεζοῦ (A II 278)
3. (Trample on) θαυρισμος θαυρισμος (A I 395)
4. (Things we have) γυνηκαρυς πκαρυς γυνηκαρυς προήπνεε προήπνεε (IV 71)

(b)

1. κατα-τεφμε 2ούν ὢγνηκον ὢγνηκον (A I 150)
2. (They speak) ωγνη ὢγνη (A I 12)
3. (The Lord sends them off) εναγ εναγ (A I 12)
4. (You tear them apart) ποιε ποιε μὴ λακμη λακμη (A I 108)
5. (The shame diminished) ωγκα ωγκα (A I 101)

(c)

1. ἴων ἴωεων ῤηνεν ῤηνεν μεε 2α-γαν γαν (A II 116)

3. THE NOMINAL SENTENCE: CLAUSES PREDICATING A PRONOUN OR NOUN SYNTAGM

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 300-302, 304-305, 307; Steindorf parr. 298-312; Till parr. 242-246; Vergote parr. 193-198; Lambdin parr. 6.1, 6.2, 15.2, 22.2; *Polotsky Nominalsatz; Shisha-Halevy, “Patterns”; “Discovery Procedure”

3.1 THE INTERLOCUTIVE (1st/2nd person) PATTERN: # interlocutive (1st-2nd person: “I/we, you”) pronominal theme (subject) + noun-syntagm theme (predicate) #: “I am/you are ...”. See table B1. Negatived: #: (N-) theme + theme an #

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
*Polotsky, Nominalsatz parr. 20-30; Shisha-Halevy, “Patterns”

1. άνυ-ουπονυρος Ἧρωος (III 123)
2. άνι-ανοκ (III 15)
[OBS. anok: augens, marking the question as rhetorical. On the augens as a grammatical category, see Shisha-Halevy chapter 6]
3. άνυ-ουκαταρωτικι αν ἰρωος αλα ανυ-ουκαταρωτι ἰμιν ἰμιν (III 117)
THE FORMAL-FUNCTIONAL SYSTEM

(NB: οὐκαταρωτῶν indef. article with the preposition κατα-: "one according to ..."

4. ὧτι-ογεντίσ (Ch. 42)
5. ὠτκογεγοντε μιογιαροογε (Ch. 36)
6. ὧτι-ογογ (III 38)
   (NB: ογογ indef. article + interrogative pronoun)
7. εὐξε-ὀτκογηγνα ὅ φαγεκελο (, then I too am a servant of God) (III 38)
8. ὧτε-ογμᾶγ ἃν (III 22)
9. ἀν-τεναμε (P 130.4 104 123)
10. ἀνου-τεναν αὐω ἀνου-τεναττηπε (A I 134)
    (NB: ἀνου- fuller variant of ἀν-, 1st plural subject)
11. ἀνουτενογ ἀε γωων εἰτε ἐπρο εἰτε ἀχσων εἰτε ρῆμα
    εἰτε ζηκε (Lyd. 362)
12. ἀνουτενοδα ἀνουτενορωμε ἃν (A II 174)
13. εὐξε-ἀνου-τενερ αὐτε ἀπηρρο φεκε εἰε ἀνουτενόρρο (A I 164)
14. ἀνουτε-πωτα ἃν (Wess. 9 118a)
    (NB: πωτα possessive pronoun, "yours (pl.)")
15. ἀνουτε-τενεβρ-ε-γωγ ἁπικατανας ἀνουτε-τενα-τογεοι
    ἁπετὴμα (Thompson K 3 vo)
    (NB: ἀνουτε-: fuller variant of ἀνου-; ἁ- auxiliary "do, make",
    deriving verbs from nouns; ἁπετὴμα determinate relative present
    predicating an adverb (section 19.1.1): "he who (is) there" = "that
    one (yonder)"

3.1.1 THE INTERLOCUTIVE (1st/2nd person) THEME (SUBJECT) TOPICALIZED, i.e. represented in front of the clause as well as in the first position of the pattern: "As for me/you, I am/you are ...": # noun/ pronoun + [1st/2nd pron. theme + noun-syntagm rheme] #. See TABLE B1

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
* POLOTSKY, Nominalsatz, parr. 35-38

1. ἀνοκ γωωτ αὐτενεβρσα (III 38)
   (NB: γωωτ 1st person sgl. of the reinforcer γωω-: "for my
   part", "I too")
2. ἀνοκ ἀε πιταλαιψρος αὐτενογικε γηνα-πκας αὐτενογ-
   ργε-ζηκε γηνα-τπε (Ch. 99)
3. ἄν το ἠματὲ ἠνεογμακλὶ ἄν (III 22)
   {NB: ἠματὲ 2nd person sgl. feminine of ἠμω -}
4. πογα πογα ἀνον-κηλος ἐκα-ερυ (Leyd. 348, cf. Eph. 4:25)
5. ἀνον γαρ ἀνονζεταλαμπρος ἓπερτο ἑβολ Ἔπαξος (P 131.7 46 254)

3.1.2 THE INTERLOCUTIVE (1st/2nd person) PATTERN CONVERTED (see tables B.1, G)

(a) Circumstantial (ε- + interlocutive pattern): “although ...” (28-30)
(d) Preterite (né- + interlocutive pattern): in remote wish (“O that I were ...”) (41)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STEINDORFF parr. 374, 377, 479f.; VERGOTE p. 162 parr. 162, 166(2), 204;
LAMIDIN parr. 25.1 (d); *POLOTSKY, Nom. Transposition parr. 6, 22-33.

(a) Circumstantial:
1. (You pretend to be righteous) εντετιν-κενγαστε (III 135)
2. (Is it not amazing that I have told you all that is on my mind) εαντι-
   ὦγεβίκην ἑρεμε (Ch. 108)

(d) Preterite:
   1. ἡμοι νεανον-γεα ἡμοογ (IV 91)

3.2 THE DELOCUTIVE (3rd person) PATTERN: # nominal/pronominal rheme (predicate) + delocutive (“he, she, they”) pronominal
   theme (subject): πε/τε/νε ≠. See table B2a
   
   Negatived: ≠ (ϊ-) rheme + ἃν + theme ≠
   
   NB: The pronominal theme (πε, τε, νε) refers either to a preceding
   nominal (“he/she/it/they are”) or to the determinator of its own rheme,
   when it is used impersonally (“it is”); exx. for the latter case are texts 6,
   7, 10, 13-18.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
*POLOTSKY, Nominalsatz parr. 20-30, 34
1. πνούτε πε· πνούτε αν πε (Ch. 65f.)
2. οὐγιόφρων πε (Ch. 95)
3. οὐχρων πε· οὐσοφός πε (Wess. 9 139a)
4. (Of the snake:) οὐ 2ωμν πε 2ως εὐχέ-ογκαν ἰνογς πε (Ch. 30)
   (NB: 2ωμν particle: "anyway"; 2ως εὐχέ- "as if")
5. ἴππαροογυ τὴν πε (Ch. 95)
6. (When you console a man on someone who was killed, do not tell him) ἔξε-πεψαζε πε ἴππεψαζε δε αν πε (III 43)
7. ζενκακ πε (A II 342)
8. ζεναγάθον τηρούν πε (III 114)
9. (Of the Bride in Song of Songs:) οὔει γαρ τε οὐνομ ἰμίμνυε 
   δε τε οὐγαρενος τε Αγω οὐχελετε τε οὐκπος τε 
   Αγω οὐγαλαν τε ... οὐλαος τε Αγω οὐπροφυτης τε ... 
   οὐσυττε τε Αγω ογόν τε οὐγηρε ψην τε Αγω ογ- 
   πρεβεγτης τε οὐσεττε τε Αγω ογηαγ τε ογί τε 
   Αγω ογολικ δε ον τε (III 57-8)
   [OBS. The indefinite nouns predicated of the feminine τε “she is”
   are of feminine or masculine gender: the real predicate is the
   indefinite article ου- “a (fem.)”]
10. πεναλογ ψην πε Ηατροογυ (P 130.1 133 329)
    [OBS. Note the position of the theme πε, prosodically weaker than
    other constituents of the clause (“enclitic”)]
11. χενειαβλων πε εμεγουως (IV 68)
    (NB: εμεγουως circumstantial conversion of the negative aorist
    in adnominal role (sections 6.2.1, 27.1) describing χενειαβλων
    “that are not able to talk”)
    [OBS. Note the position of the theme πε]
12. (Of gold:) οὐρακογ νακ πε εξεκικτι κ αγω πεκκοκικεκ πε 
    εκρνς (A II 531)
    (NB: εξεκικτι, εκρνς circumstantial present forms (sections
    15.1.1, 16.1.1, 28.1) “when you are asleep... when you are awake”;
    νακ the preposition ἵ-/νακ before the 2nd sgl. masc. suffix)
13. (When a thief is hated,) η-ογνοίζε αν τε ογαε η-ογονε αν 
    πε αλλα ογαγαθον ηνογο πε (A I 95)
14. πνεοεις αν πε (IV 154)
15. τιμετεια τε (IV 154)
16. πωσις πε· τεπρω τε (IV 110f.)
17. τεγυν τε (IV 83)
18. Ἁ-πωκ ἂν πε πν̄ωβ ἅλλα πα-τανοξῆ Ἱπνογυτε πε (Ch. 35)  
   {NB: πωκ, πα- possessive pronouns (section 1.1 h)}
19. ὅγον πε ἡ γενΣηνην υ ὁπορνος πε ἡ γεν̄πορνος υ ἡ ἱγεμονίας-εἰδωλον υ (III 192)

3.2.1 THE DELOCUTIVE (third person) SUBJECT EXPANDED  
   and SPECIFIED BY AN APPOSITIVE NOUN: # nominal/pronominal  
   rheme (predicate) + πε /τε /νε + noun (specifying or explicating  
   πε /τε /νε) # (Table B2b)
   Negatived: # (ṉ-) nominal/pronominal rheme + ἂν + πε /τε /νε +  
   noun #

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
* Polotsky, Nominalsatz parr. 38-45

1. ᾿ντοq πε πνογυτε (Ch. 84)
2. ἄν τε ταi (Ch. 121)
3. ὁγ τε τενσενιc (Ch. 82)
4. ὁγνρ πε πεκογαδ (Wess. 9 117b)
5. τωτν gaρ τε τε-εγρφογυνη τηρε υ νεςνην (III 117)
6. παι πε πνογυτε Ἑμε (Ch. 83)
7. πωκ πε πνογα πωκ πε πρατ τσκ τε τοικομενη (III 90)
8. νονρ πε προκετ μπνογα μν̄ςμαρ γημ (III 73)
9. ὁγμακριος πε ὁγραζρ ἱπεξε ζνογυμ (P 130.2 110 ρο)
10. αρα γεμκακ πουρε νεςγακε (Wess. 9 94a)
11. ὁγοιοτε τε τνοΪ ξαραμη ξεπενωεις εξογυ αρον (III 76)
12. γεματο νεςγακε εγραι εξων αγω γεματοα ξαν νε (A 119)
   {NB: εγραι εξων two prepositional phrases: see ε-, γραι and  
   εξω-}
13. ἄφ πε πνοβ πνεοεις ζναναργ πε χιν-παναργ πε (III 16)
   {NB: χιν- = χιν- “or”}
14. ἃ ογταμιο πε πνυρε Ἰπνογυτε (Orig. 310)
   {NB: ἃ introduces a rhetorical question}
15. ὁγλακ εξαζρ ηρογον πε πλας ημακεβος (III 113)
   {NB: εξαζροi circumstantial present (sections 16.1.1, 27.1) de-  
   scribing ὁγλακ “that is impure”}
16. πως γαρ ἂν πε πολα (Or. 168) (said of the beautiful woman)
17. ἄω βε πε πεκκω νες-πωκαε μνεςκω ἱγεγραφη (III 52)
18. (He who denies, saying) ἵνα ἀν ἐν πείσε (III 114)
19. ταὶ τε θεὶ ἔν πας ταῖς (E 78)
   [OBS. ταὶ τε θεὶ “thus”, “in this manner” (lit. “this is the
   manner”); compare θεὶ ἔν- or κατὰ θεὶ ἔν- “as”, “like” (lit. “in the
   manner”, “according to the manner”) and θεὶ τε se “in this manner”,
   “thus”. “The manner” (θεὶ i.e. τε-θεὶ) is followed by ἔν- for a
   compared noun or by a relative for a compared verbal action, event
   or state. The possessive article is used for a compared person:
   θεὶ τε se “like us”, lit. “in our manner”]
20. ἄντι πε πεῖβε ἡμηρὶ ἡ ὁγ ἐν τε τὰματάβε (IV 118)
21. ἡ̄πω ἀν ἐν πεἰσαξε ὡγτε ἡμπαλλαγ ἡγναγωγ ἂν ἐν
   πεἰσαξε ολλα πατοικομομην θηρὴ (A 1 62)
22. οὐγοβ πε πρωμε (Young 14)

3.2.2 THE DELOCUTIVE (3rd person) THEME (SUBJECT) TOPO-
    CALIZED, i.e. represented in front of the clause as well as in the second
    position of the pattern: “As for the man, he is…”: # noun/pronoun +
    [nominal/pronominal theme (predicate) + πε / τε / θε] #
    Negatived: # noun/pronoun + (ἀ-+) + theme + ἀν + πε / τε / θε #
    (Table B2c)

Bibliography:
* PoIotsky, Nominalsatz part. 35-8

1. ἰτοφ ἀγ χα ρεικωτ ὅγα πε (RE 11 17)
2. πεισαξε ἰμικεκτολὴ ηθρογ γεννε ἄν ογογ ἄε γενδολ
   ἔν (III 141)
3. ἀγαβον ἄμ ὅγγ ἀλα (III 72)
4. πεισαγον πα-ασέριον ἂν ἐν ἀλλα πα-απεσο ἀλ (III 47)
5. (Can you say:) αρ-πεισαγον ὁγεβολ ἱμπογωγ υπ ἀο (P 130.5
   17 107)
   {NB: ὁγεβολ ἱμπογωγ υπ the indefinite article with an adverbial
   phrase, ἐνολ χ-., consisting of ἐνολ “out” further qualified and
   precised by the preposition χ-)
6. πεισιὰσε ἱ-ὁγεβολ ἂν ἐν ἱμπτωςι ἱμπεσ (E 79)
7. ἕ ἱμονή ἄμ ἰκεννε ἄν ἀγ ἀνοε ἄμ ἰκεν ἱμονή ἀο
   (E 92)
8. πει-νι ἄγ χαρ παρωμε ἂν ἐν ἀλλα παπνογ υτε ἀο (P 130.4 156
   364)
9. τείνοι ἀνώπεα ὁγεβολ ἡμι-πνούτε τε ἀγω ὁγεβολ ἡμι-ρωμε ἀν τε πεῖτως ὁγεβολ ἡμιπρε πε ἀγω ὁγεβολ ἀν πε ἡμπκαζ (III 107)
   {NB: ὁγεβολ ἡμι- the indefinite article with ἐβολ, further
      precised by ἡμι- (“by the agency of”)
   [OBS. Note the positions of ἀν, πε / τε]}
10. ποσε ἱπονα πογα ἀγω περεουογ πωγ πε εἰτε γοογτ
      εἰτε εἰσινε (IV 155)

3.2.3 THE DELOCUTIVE (3rd person) PATTERN CONVERTED
   (see Tables B2, G)

(a) Circumstantial (ε- + delocutive pattern): “although”, also adnominal
   (27-30)
(b) Relative (ετε- + delocutive pattern): “who…” (31-33)
(d) Preterite (νε- + delocutive pattern): past tense, anteriority, hypothetrical result (39-41)

(a) Circumstantial:

1. ὁγονουε επωι πε (A I 84)
2. τετχωε ετεχω ἤμος ἁυ-ἀν- ὁγαρποθος ἐογει ἀν τε
   (A II 62)
   {NB: ετεχω relative present predicating ἥω “say” (section 15.1.1)
      with ἤμο-ς “it” the neuter feminine (direct-object-marking prepo-
      sition + ε) as an empty direct object: “who says ⟨it⟩”;
   [OBS. ἐογει “one (fem.)” represents the indefinite article ἁυ- (“a
      (fem.)” of the predicate in the first (affirmative) Nominal Sentence]
3. (These you say are pure) ἐζενατωαγ νε (E 67)
4. (They think of themselves ἁυ-ζεναθαον νε εζενπονηπον νε
   (A I 209)
5. (How can anything have existed before Him) εντοψ πε ταιε
      ἡπὼςωτ τηρύ (Wess. 9 147c)
6. ρωμε εζενπρακις σιμν νε νεγυβυγε (IV 25)
   {NB: adnominal circumstantial, expanding (qualifying) ρωμε;}
7. ὁγονουε ε-μπωκ ἀν πε (Or. 155)

(b) Relative:

1. ἀνσεβνες ναμε ἐτεζενβοτε ἔμπνεοες νε νεγυβουγε (IV 10)
2. πνηλσωε ετε-μπωκ ἀν πε (P 130.2 95 149)
3. ἄνπην ετεεντωκ ἀν τε (Or. 155)
4. **nete-noyq ne** (III 93)
   {NB: *nete* - the plural definite article as antecedent (nucleus, i.e. grammatical center or head) of the relative: “they who” (section 31.1). The predicate here as in exx. 2, 3, 5, 7 is a possessive pronoun (section 1.1)}

5. **petepwi an ne petepwoq ne** (Ch. 77)

6. **net-nozennoyte an ne** (III 45)

7. **tetetwK te tetetwK an te petepw ne** (Or. 158)
   {NB: *πω* 2nd person sgl. fem. possessive pronoun (*πω* + zero suffix)}

8. **ourwme noywt etennoyte pe oymFay noywt ete- thiymh nthme te** (IV 129)
   [OBS. *ete* ... *te* and *etennai pe* ... are used for “namely” and glossing (“to wit”). Unlike the relative conversion elsewhere (section 31.1-2), this is compatible also with indefinite and zero nouns. See also ex. 10]

9. **nai eteoyvate pe xooy (IV 76)**

10. **(nnoyi) etenonok pe pmiyal mpynnute (tvavor) eten- tok pe pmiyal mpammvonac (III 79)**

11. **petepwoq pe pkaq thp (Young 4)**

(d) Preterite:

1. **kaigap negenpwe ne** (and became wolves), **negennagloac ne** (and became demons) (Ch. 72)

2. **nenaqwveer gap ne** (Ch. 108)

3. **tpetpa gap nepeXe te** (III 51. cf. I Cor. 10:4)

4. **neoywime nay an ne** (III 75)

3.3 **THE COPULAR PATTERN**: ≠ nominal/pronominal theme (subject) + copula (*ne*, more rarely *te*) + nominal rHEME (predicate) ≠:
   see Table B3.

The theme in this pattern is characteristically context-bound, e.g. (and most frequently) resuming a preceding noun and giving it thematic status; in this role the pattern is used for glossing or explicating preceding text.

**BIBLIOGRAPHY:****

*Polotsky, Nominalsatz* parr. 46-55; Shisha-Halevy, “Patterns”, “Discovery Procedure” 165f.
1. πωγύσων ἵτενεινε ἐμρωθὲν εἰς οὐφαστήκε αὐς εἰν-η-μαζομὲν (Ch. 98)  
   {NB: ε- τῆ- “not to ...”, the preposition ε- “to” followed by -τῆ- negating the infinitive)
2. πάνα ἡμῖνθαο πε ἡά (Ch. 98)  
   {OBS. The rheme (predicate) here is the infinitive ἡά}
3. θελικε ςής ἔναβος πε γελαποιε επνὰ ἑντουτε πνεαν- 
   γιη (Ch. 99)
4. πεγυνοῦτε γαρ πε ρωμε (IV 183)
5. πεγυνοῦτε ἀν πε τε (Ch. 109γ.)
6. μν γαρ καταφαλαγίαν ἱνεγραφή ἀν πε πεγαρελιαν (Wess. 9 130α)
7. πὼβ ἱματικοῖς πε χωβ νίμ ἱπασον πὼβ ἱνασεβης πε 
   χωβ νίμ ἵππωνεφ (Wess. 9 177β)
8. τνογνε ἱνανία ΝΠΝμε πε πνόλ τνογνε ἱματικοςκυνν μιμ 
   τε της (A II 494)  
   {OBS. τε is a feminine form of the copula, here following a 
   feminine theme}
9. οὐκογν ἱμεξωκ ἀν εβόλ ἱππομος πε τη-η-ἀνασ 
   ἱνογς... ἀλλὰ πεξωκ εβόλ ἱππομος πε τη-η-ἀναση 
   επτηρῆ (IV 66)
10. τεσβε ἡπερομε πε ὦγοεϊκ ἱπνομοοογ ἱνκε-τρόφη 
    (Rossi 2/3 90)
11. (“Sow the seed at dawn (ἵνηναγ ἱςώρπ)”’) πηαςη ἱςωρπ πε 
    τὴντωμε γην (P 131.5 43 99)  
   {OBS. The theme (subject) resumes here an element of the preceding 
   context, which is then glossed by the theme (predicate): this is a 
   characteristic role of this pattern}
12. (“The demons have gathered in their dens ( quamευς)”’) ἱενςβ 
    αε νε ἕνη ἱπερομε ἤτανογε (IV 177)
13. (“’Vipers and vipers’ sons”) ἱςοο ην ετεκωμε γίκη-πκας νε 
    γελάνη νημ (Ch. 139)  
   {NB: ετεκωμε relative present: “which crawl”}
14. (“The glory of God shall be in the islands of the sea”) ἦλαλλα 
    πε πκοςομος ἵννοςος νε μεκαλασ ἵπεξε αὐς νεπτο- 
    νος γκπκας τηρη (Ch. 141)
15. (Glossing Job 6:7) πνογι αε πε παίαβολος αὐς πεγυνο 
    πε ἁνομία νημ (Rossi 2/3 89)
16. (“Woe to them who will turn impious (ασεβης) amongst you”) 
    ασεβης νε νετκτο εβόλ ἵνεντολη ἱνενειοτε νετκτο
\[ \text{εβολ} \text{ Ἰωάκε} \text{ ἱπποείς} \text{ ἐν} \text{νεμοςτὲ} \text{ ἱ·} \text{νετ·} \text{τιουγω} \text{νογ} \\
\text{ἐπιούς} \text{ (III 152f.)} \]

[NB: the rhemes (predicates) are definite relative present forms: \text{νεμοςτὲ} \text{ εβολ} "they who reject", \text{νεμοςτὲ} "they who hate". Both are followed by the direct-object marker \text{ν}; \text{νετ·} \text{τιουγω} \text{νογ} definite relative present predicating a prepositional phrase: "they who are on (ἐν-) their bosom (τοῦγω-ογ)", i.e. "their neighbours"

17. (I asked:) \text{νιμ} \text{ πε} \text{ παι} (they answered:) \text{παι} \text{ πε} \text{ παγλος} \text{ πανος-} \\
\text{τολος} \text{ (IV 198)} \\
[ΟBS: \text{νιμ} \text{ πε} \text{ παι}, \text{παι} \text{ πε} \ldots: note the alternation of the delocutive pattern in the inquiry with the copular in the response]

3.3.1 THE COPULAR PATTERN CONVERTED (see Tables B3, G)

(a) Circumstantial (ἐ- + copular pattern): "... being ...", also adnominal (27-30)

(b) Relative (ἐτε- + copular pattern): "who ..." (31-33)

(c) Preterite (ἐν- + copular pattern): past tense, hypothetical condition and result (39-41)

(a) Circumstantial:

1. (According to the Apostle's "He who worked at us",) \text{επαι} \text{ πε} \text{ πνοιτε} \text{ (III 33)}

2. (see) \text{ἐγρωμε} \text{ εγχοος} \text{ ἡπετελωνιον} \text{ επεκατ} \text{ πε} \text{ μαθ-} \\
\text{αιος} \text{ (Mt. 9)} \\
{NB: \text{εγρωμε} adnominal circumstantial present (sections 15.1.1, 27.1), "sitting": the two circumstantials here qualify the indefinite \text{σγ}-}

(b) Relative:

1. \text{πεπων ομελακτος} \text{ ετε·τεσφυςις} \text{ πε} \text{ κιμ} \text{ ἱτεμπα} \\
\text{επεατ} \text{ (III 49)} \\
{NB: \text{εν-} = \text{ν}-}

2. \text{μετετεσμυνω} \text{ πε} \text{ μισμε} \text{ μιμακ} \text{ (Ch. 37)} \\
{NB: \text{μετε-} definite determined relative, "they who". Similarly in text 3; the rhemes in 1-3 are infinitives)

3. \text{μετετευγωμω} \text{ πε} \text{ κωνως} \text{ εςογς} \text{ εςογ} \text{ ἱπενυρμα} \text{ γιασ-} \\
\text{πκς} \text{ (Ch. 86)}
(d) Preterite:

1. ἐνεπεκνούτε ἂν πε ἑττά (Ε 67)
   {NB: ἐνε-, circumstantial preterite as remote or hypothetical condition (section 41). ἑττά possessed form of ἑν with a 2nd sgl. masc. possessor suffix pronoun}

3.4 ASSORTED PATTERNS, COMBINED

1. ἁνον-νίμ ἡ ἑν-ογ ἃ ἅ ἆ ἄ ἁ (ΙΙΙ 107)
2. ἀνονεπεθ-νοβε ἄτομ αὐ ἂ ογει ἅτομ ἅτομ (ΙΙΙ 142)
   {NB: ογειnominalized relative present (section 31.1.1): “one who is holy”}
3. ἀνονεπεθ-μαλ αὐ ἄτομ πε πανταχων αὐ ἁ ἁ ἁ ἁ (ΙV 34)
4. (The woman who says:) ἀνογαπαθεθος εογει ἃ ἀν ἀ (Α II 62)
   [OBS. εογει “one (fem.)”, resuming ογ- in ογαπαθεθος: cf. “one” resuming the indefinite article in English and other European languages]
5. τταπρο μπάοντ όγοωψ μνα τε αὐ ἂ ογα ἀ-ψυχη ἃ με νεκσπότογ (ΙV 59)
   {NB: μπαοντ = μα-ητ}
6. πεκνούτε πε ἑττά αὐ ἄτο-ματακικον τητά (Ρ 131.6 88 το)
7. πναρακάτος μεν μάκε με πεπηλα ετογάλλ ... αὐ ἂ παγ- λος ἃ ἃ (Α II 403)
   {NB: ετογάλλ: relative present, “who is holy”}

(*) 3.5 SOME SPECIAL NOMINAL SENTENCE RHEMES or PATTERNS

(a) Zero-determined rheme (predicate) in the delocutive pattern, corresponding to the predication of an adjective in English (predicating an abstract quality)
(b) Adverb predicated in the delocutive pattern (19-20)
(c) The reiterated noun/personal pronoun as rheme of the theme πε, predicing the immutability of the delocutive theme; ὁν “still” is a component of this pattern
(d) The ἀνοκ πε” pattern, meaning “it is I”, “I am in existence”, “I am he”, “I am someone important”
(e) The “balanced” pattern, equating the rHEME and theme terms in a logically irreversible “algebraic” proposition

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
* Polotsky, *Nominalsatz* par. 31-33; Shisha-Halevy, “Patterns”, “Discovery Procedure” 163 ff.

(a)
1. ἐκάρ ηῆθ πὲ σωτῆ ἐνείσωσε (A I 176)
2. ἱβε πὲ πενθὰν πὶμὲ ἰὰν (RE 10 161)
   [OBS. negates the predicative term πὶμὲ]
3. (An exquisite house) ἐμοίπε πὲ ἅγγ ἐροὶ (A II 114)
   [NB: the circumstantial converter, marking the Nominal Sentence as adnominal to (qualifying) the indefinite οὐῃ]
4. ὑπε πὲ ἄναγ (A I 210)

(b)
1. ἐπὶπεὶς ὑ υὶὲ ἅμ- ὝΠ- ὝΠ- ὝΠ- ὝΠ- ὝΠ- ὝΠ- (Ch. 75)
2. ὁλ-πεὶς ὑ πὲ τετῆμῆτ- ὑ ὑ ὑ ὑ ὑ ὑ ὑ (P 130.1 135 333f.)
   [OBS. ἐπὶπει- here forms the abstract noun corresponding to the concrete ὑ ὑ ὑ ὑ ὑ ὑ ὑ]
3. ἑπὶ ὑ ὑ ὑ ὑ ὑ ὑ ὑ ὑ ὑ ὑ (III 46)

(c)
1. νεκτῇς πὲ ἅγγ νεκτῶς νίεσερπ ἄντοογ ἄντοογ ὑ πὲ (III 42)
2. πεκτῇς πὲ πεκτῇς ὑ πὲ ἅγγ ἄντοκ ἄντοκ ὑ πὲ (Ch. 21)
3. νεκτῇς ἄπ- ἄντοογ ἄντοογ ὑ πὲ (Ch. 143)
4. (Of Christ’s Church) ἄντοκ ἄντοκ ὑ πὲ (III 31)
5. δογκλαολε παραγε ὑ μοο ἄντοογ ἄντοογ ὑ πὲ ... ἐπὶπεὶς ὑ μοο ἄντοογ ἄντοογ ὑ πὲ ὑ (Cl. Pr. 36 201)

(d)
1. (Who created them?) ἐμ ἄντοκ ὑ πὲ ἅγγ περὶ ὑ (Orig. 309)
   [NB: ἐμ... ὑ... is a rhetorical question, presupposing an affirmative answer: “It is, isn’t it...?”]
2. ἐμ ἐκάρ πὲ ἄντοκ ὑ ὑ μοο ὑ πὲ ἅγγ ἄντοκ ὑ πὲ ὑ ὑ (Ch. 63f., cf. Heb. 13:8)
3. (You cry out:) ἔας ὑ ὑ ἄντοκ ὑ πὲ (Ch. 23)
[OBS. Contrast the feminine rhyme (predicate) pronoun with the
invariable πε ("it", "ce", "es"), with τε predicating the definite
noun θαν]  
4. (It is the monks that are supposed to fast.) ἡτοογ γαμε πε (Ch.
102)  
5. ανοκ πε πνεοςις (A I 370)  
[OBS. This is the "theological" existential "ανοκ πε"]

(e)  
1. νεκκαρπος ἀπονησον πε νογογ λγι νογογ πε νογκ (P
130.2 109 νο)
{NB: νογογ, νογκ possessive pronouns: "theirs", "yours"}
2. προ πεξε πνημε ἀπρο πετε-νεκβυνε πε νεκβυνε
χιν-ταρχιν ἀνεμων (RE 10 162)
{NB: πετενεκ-... "You whose...."}
3. νεμελος πε νεμελος (A II 2)
4. ανον πε ητοπ (III 22)

(*) 4 THE PROPER NAME: SELECTED SPECIAL
CONSTRUCTIONS

(a) Determination. The personal Proper Name is normally not determi-
nated, and functions in many ways like a personal pronoun. Some
place-names differ in this respect.

(b) The Proper Name as nucleus (grammatical center of its construction).
The Proper Name is qualified (expanded) appositively, by a noun
apposition that is usually definite or by a definite relative verb form.
The expansion marker η- (1.2-1.3) expresses possession only.

(c) The Proper Name as expansion (satellite, grammatical periphery).
The Proper Name itself may "name-identify" (expand) an appellative
(common) noun, in appositive or conjunctural (κε- "quoting")
constructions.

(d) The Proper Name as theme (predicate): naming constructions,
name-identifying constructions.

*(a)  
1. πεσμοτ ηαβελ παικαίος ηα-σιμ ηα-καφετ ηα-ιαδακ ηα-
ιωσηφ (III 173)
2. αναικακ ηηιζηαν-ηαζαηακ (E 76)
3. αβραακ αβραακ (Genesis 22:11)
[OBS. The Proper Name is reiterated in address ("vocative"), esp.
in the Scriptures]
4. ἄτικο τάζων ματάμοι (P 130.2 100 vo)
   (NB: ματάμοι imperative of a causative verb (section 8), with a
   1st person sgl. object: “tell me”)
5. ἔριμε ἱσοδομά μιγομορρα (III 132)
6. πεπισκόπος ἱκαρχαῖς ἤτεθεσποταμία (III 109)
7. τσαβαλάνι (III 165)
8. δακ-θαλακα ἤτταλαλα (III 99)
9. θείελη = θείελη (III 167)
   (NB: θείελη = τ-γιερογιαλή)

(b)
1. παγός παποστολός (IV 198)
2. ἔε πενχοεις (III 224)
3. απολάλων πκιερφάδος (Α 1 386)
4. ταπρίνος πγκτεθε (III 30)
5. ἀννα τσθνη ἰπάναλη (IV 29)
6. ζαχαρίας πσκφρε ἱπαρακας πεπετατετίστεβε (III 166)
   (NB: πεπετατετίστεβεq determined (definite) relative perfect
   (sections 6.1.1, 31.1) in apposition to the Proper Name: “he whom
   you (pl.) murdered” (the verb ἰστασ))
7. (not shenoute) σερκιος παγός ουρωμέ ἰνθεῖς (Act.
   13:7)

(c)
1. παρχιεπισκόπος κυριάς (III 89)
2. πετεθείς Ἰκακάιτ-γνή θαφά (III 50)
3. παίκας ισα (III 78)
4. πειανόμος ιαθοεδονος (III 84)
5. πειτογας ἰψερες (III 106)
   (NB: πειτογας nominalized relative, “one who is holy”)
6. πρεπόνε σπατάς (IV 27)
7. ομος όκ-σελάο (III 59)
8. πείκας όκ-μοναχος (BM 253)
   [OBS. Note the affinity of zero-determined appellatives with Proper
   Names; the former are in this case “lexeme” or “notion” names]
9. παυκάς όκ-ζωρίφε (Wess. 9 133b)
10. ογ πε πειρας όδολονον (Α 1 391)

(d)
1. περπαν πε βερσ (Rossi 2/3)
2. (not shenoute) ογωνις επεκραν πε ναξαρας (Luc. 1:26)
{NB: ε- circumstantial converter, marking the naming clause as adnominal to (qualifying) οὐνομαίκιν}

3. κρόνος ετεπετέκε πε ήφαστός ετεπτάκε πε (A I 383f., 385)
   [OBS. The relative Nominal Sentence ετε...πε serving as a hermeneutical (glossing) construction (section 3.3.1) is not appositive, even when describing a Proper Name]

4. παί ετημαγ ετειμαναν πε (IV 26)
   {NB: ετημαγ “who is there”, “yonder”: relative present predicating the adverb ἴμαγ “there”}

5. σύν εκαγ ετεικών επ τήν άναπεσα (III 99)

6. αγμοῦτε επεδεικα τήν άε-βελεβοῦα (IV 35)
   {NB: αγμοῦτε 3rd person plural perfect form (section 6.1), predicating μοῦτε: “they called”}

7. (The Pharisees who wished) ετρεγμούτε ερεογ εμολ γιτοο-
   τού τηρωμε άε-2παςει εγων άε-πεητ-εσω (III 161)
   {NB: ετρεγ- “that they should...”, the preposition ε- with the causative infinitive τρεγμοῦτε (9.0.1b); γιτοοτοῦ see γίτων-}
   [OBS. γιτοοτοῦ τή- an indirect construction (= 3rd-person suffix pronoun + τή- + noun) for attaching a nominal possessor to an intimately possessed noun (in this case, τωρε (τοοτ-) “hand”; “they” in ετρεγ- is generic (“impersonal”), serving with εμολ γίτων- to express the passive]

5 THE ADVERB PHRASE

Adverbs (lexemes, inanaylzable) are rare: ταί “here”. Prepositional phrases (preposition + noun, with the prenominal form of the preposition, i.e. its glossary form; preposition + (suffix) pronoun, with the preposition in its special prenominal alternant form: γιν-πή “in the house”, γιν-πή “in it (him)”, μι-πή “with the people”, μιμή “with them”.

The three fixed phrases εμολ “out” (ε- + εμολ)
   εγωγ “in(to)” (ε- + εγωγ)
   επα “up” or “down” (ε- + επα), in turn further specified by prepositional phrases. The whole complex usually modifies verb lexemes (infinitives).

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN PARI 512-588; STEINORFF 174-206; TILL PARI 233-240; VERGOTE
parr. 173-177; Lambdin parr. 1.4, 7.2, 8.1, 9.1, 10.1f., 10.4, 18.3; Layton, “Compound Prepositions”, *Shisha-Halevy*, Chapter 1

1. ἡπειρού (III 138)
2. ζητογραμμέ μνογραμμέ (Or. 166)
3. τακτοθύστε άλλε (Or. 168)
4. ἰτειχε (IV 80)
5. ήσε (Ch. 76)
6. ἐβολ ζητοπά καθεν άγω ζητοκαδ ζατη-θυτή (IV 79)
7. ἰενάνασ επικίνδυ (Α I 298)
8. άκοιναγο τομ άγώ ον τενογ (III 98)
9. ζοινε ζατηθυτή (IV 28)
10. ἰενκατακατά (IV 81)
11. ογηπτεκεφυσικ (IV 112)

[OBS. The definite article here is specified by a prepositional phrase]

12. ποσολ άμβωσ (A II 18)
13. ζητονδυτε άε φανερον (P 130.4 125 37)
14. ετθεω (Or. 157)
15. ετηπει (Or. 156)
16. μο εβολ έηθή (Or. 154)
17. ετθντογ (Or. 164)
18. έραι έηθε (III 201)

{NB: έηθε: 2nd sgl. fem. of έη-/έηθ- = “in”}
19. κααν νε εβολ (III 202f.)

{NB: νε: 2nd sgl. fem. of ή-/ήα = “to”; κααν see κώ}
20. εαυον κε (III 202)

{NB: εαυον: ε- + infinitive (άω with 3rd sgl. fem. object, “it’’)}
21. ταν ερο (III 201)
22. ταομντ ετθτυ (Ch. 114)
23. ίντον εογη επεφθα άητον (E 82)
24. ικω νενοφ άηνεγκαγωνε (E 83)
25. ικων νενοφ άητοοτη (E 85)
26. έραι εε αε (E 91)
27. ήνι άηθε αηεκεθε (Or. 155)
28. έηακα εαμε ζενού 2 άηκακα (III 203)
29. ακτακει εε αε αλεγκονοε (E 91)
30. έαω άηκαν (E 87)
31. ετθνιν ή ετθεο έτθντ άημε (Wess. 9 112)

{NB: ετθντ 1st person sgl., άημε 2nd person sgl. fem. forms of the prepositions έτθ-, άη-}
UNIT (II): THE TENSE-BASE CONJUGATION (TRIPARTITE PATTERN)
(Sections 6-7)

6 MAIN-SENTENCE conjugation:

6.1 The PERFECT base: ι- (affirmative), ιπ(e)- (negative)

6.1.1 The perfect, converted

6.2 The AORIST base: ιω(πe)- (affirmative), ιε(πe)- (negative)

6.2.1 The aorist, converted

6.3 ιπατ(e)- "NOT YET":

6.3.1 ιπατηςωτι converted

6.4 The OPTATIVE ("Third Future") base: ε- ... ε- (affirmative), επ(e)- (negative)

7 DEPENDENT CLAUSE conjugation:

7.1 ιαντ(e)-

7.2 TEMPORAL: ιτερε- ("since-", "after-", "having ...")

7.3 CONDITIONAL: ε - ... ωαν-, ερωαν- ("if-", "when(ever)")

negated: ε - ... ιαντι-/ερωαντι-

7.4 The CONJUNCTIVE: "... and ...", "... or ...", ιτι-/ιτετι-, negated:

ιτι-/ιτετι-

6-7 THE TENSE-BASE CONJUGATION (Table C) conjugates a verb phrase, consisting of the infinitive discontinuously preceded by a set of tense prefixes for an actor (noun phrases, demonstrative or indefinite pronouns, or a suffix pronoun, with a special presuffixal base often used); the verb phrase (base + infinitive) is predicate (rHEME), the actor is subject (theme).

NB: (1) The nominal actor can either occur after the base, in substitution to the actor suffix (ι-η-ςωτι / ι-πρωμις ςωτι), or follow the
whole conjugation form in apposition to a 3rd person suffix, in which case it must be introduced by ἀναίο (ἀκούσω τοὺς θεούς).

(2) the direct object of the verb is constructed in two different ways:
(1) immediately following the infinitive — a nominal object combined with a special pronominal (or "construct state") form of the infinitive: ἀκούσω τοὺς θεούς, and a pronominal suffix object combined with the special presuffixal (or "pronominal state") form of the infinitive: ἀκούσω-ε-γ.
(2) introduced by the preposition (for a nominal object) or (for a pronominal suffix object).

6 THE MAIN CLAUSE conjugation pattern consists of a set of affirmative/negative pairs of bases for every tense, with the sector interposing between base and infinitive, i.e. prefixed in the noun phrase:
# base (affirmative) + actor + infinitive #
(e.g. ἰ-κ-σωτέ "He (has) heard"),
# base (negative) + actor + infinitive #
(e.g. ἰν-κ-σωτέ "He has not heard/did not hear")

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System", parr. 1-4, 7, 26; VERGOTE par. 159

6.1 THE PERFECT BASE (Table C(I)I):

Affirmative: ἵ- + actor + infinitive - ἁκούσωτε
Negative: ἰν- + pronominal actor + infinitive - ἰνακούσωτε

The Coptic perfect corresponds approximately to the Latin perfectum, or the English (and generally West European) past simple and present perfect tenses combined. Note its narrative function, with conjunctionless (asynthetic) coordination of several progressing perfect forms.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 374, 392; STEINDORFF parr. 334-338, 359-360; TILL parr. 313, 315; VERGOTE par. 159(1); LAMBDIN parr. 7.1, 8.2, 10.1-10.3

(a) Affirmative:
1. ἰ-ραῖως εἰκάτε (III 15)
2. πεῖρας ηινάγε ἐρω (III 38)
FIRST PART

3. αἰναγ ἐγγαγοὺ (IV 125)
   {NB: preposition governed by ἀγαγ; -γα the indefinite article following ε-}

4. α-γ-τακο ἂπαν ἁνεβίνη

5. ἀγασωῖ ἀγεσ-πάκε ἐγοῦν ἐγερακ ἀγεβε-πεφῖκα ἀγ-
   σιομε ἐρομ ἀγκομε ἁμοι ἁγῳ-καφ ἀκῳ (III 101)
   {NB: ἐγερα-, ἐρο-, ἁμο-, ἀκω- are the pronominal forms of
   the prepositions ἐγα-, ε-, ἁ- (dir. object) and ἐκ-}

6. ἀνηκ-ακ ἦν ἀγω ἁμες ἀκατῆ ἐκα (Leyd. 332)

7. ἄγηπτ ἃος ἡτένογςοσ (III 202)
   {NB: ἃος ἃ-: “in the manner of”, “like”}

8. ἀκατεῖ ἃ-κι-τεβδιαχ ἐγερα ἐροὶ ἐρο-πολεομὸ ἁμαὶ ἁ-κ
   ἁνόμ ἁσω ἁ-άφ ὁγνη (III 387.)
   {NB: ἃ-: preposition, governed by ἀκατεῖ, preceding the infinitive
   ἁσω, ἁ-άφ reinforce or augens, in the 1st sgl.}

9. ἀγαπάμα ἁμοὶ ἁντεκα ἁβη-νιανομὸ (Ch. 122)

10. ἀνείμε ετεγνητδωβ (P 131.5 63 νο)

11. ἀγγοῦτ ἁμογκίμε αὐταμίοο ἁβη-πνοῦτε (IV 37)

12. ἀγοῦομ ἀρακπαζ ἁμοοῦ ἀραμοῦ ἀροῦ (IV 198)

13. αμα ἁπεκταγρὸ συνογαφ ἁκα-πνοεὶς (III 72)

14. ἀτετῃ-ἀοǐτ (III 49)

[OBS. For ἀ- “become”, see text 18]

15. Ᾱτετηγυχικτα ἁμώτην ἁσω-ἀικας ἁ-ἐντηγηλαϊκτα
   ἁτετημητιταςΒ ... Ᾱτετηθ-θυτη ἁμε Ῠεντηγηποπα
   (III 135)
   {NB: ἐντηγηδαϊκτα and ἐντηγηνοπολ are two circum-
   stantial interlocutive Nominal Sentences (section 3.1.2); ἀ- ... ἃ-
   (εἰπε) “render”, “make into”}

16. ἀμοοῦτ (P 130.2 24 555)
   {NB: the actor here is pronominal and “zero” — the 2nd person sgl.
   feminine suffix: ἀ-ὁ-μοοὐτ}

17. ἀρατῆμοοῦ ὑε ἁἀα (Leyd. 410)
   {NB: ἀρα- a variant form of the perfect base before the 2nd sgl.
   fem. zero pronoun}

18. ἀγγῆα ἁπατοστ ἁφ-ογαρωΚ ἁγω ἁγγο ... ἁγ-
   ἀγως ἁφ-ογαριφ (RE 160)
   [OBS. ἀ- “become”: the “copular” ἀ-, prenominal form of the
   infinitive εἰπε]

19. ἀ-πνοεῖ ὑρ ἁροῦ (III 151)

20. ἀποκεῖς τετοοῦ ἐβολ (Ch. 26)
THE FORMAL-FUNCTIONAL SYSTEM

{NB: τττττττ 3rd person plural pronominal object with the causative verb ττττ}
21. ἀνασκολοφόν οὐγ-πνοεῖς ἀγωγεῖς αὐτοὺς τοὺς αὐτούς ἀγωγῶς ἃς ἀγαθ-κακον εὐλογῶν ζωῆς (III 85)
   {NB: παγτ- presuffixal form of the infinitive πως, with a 3rd person plural object}
22. ἀναυτοκτοῦς ἀν-μειν (III 72)
   {OBS: ἀν- "do, make": the "transitive" auxiliary ἀν- (prenominal of εἰρε), deriving compound verbs from nouns}
23. ἀρτοὺς ἠρη-αρτεῖας ἐπειρε-ΝΕΙΜΕΤΡΕΤΩς ἔνεις ὅνες ζιωτορτί (IV 188)
   {NB: ἠρ- see ἠρ; divide ΝΕΙ-ΜΗΤ-ΡΕΤ-ΧΙ-ΟΥΣ, ΝΕΙ-ΜΗΤ-ΡΕΤ-
24. τά κε θε ἧτταναι φινογαλοι αποκοτες πνούτες ἀρετούς εὐπολογοῦν ματις (Ch. 145)
   {NB: τά κε θε "thus", "this is the manner"}
25. τεχνιτος τεχνιτονάνοις ... ἀπεκαθισθε (III 206)
   {NB: ἀπ-: a variant form of the 2nd sgl. fem. perfect; θησθε: see θησθε}
26. ἀναύω χνογόνος θάρσου (A I 151)
27. ἀνεκτω (A I 445)
   {NB: ἀνεκτω - see ἀνεκτε}

(b) Negative:
1. ἁπτησί-εις εχθες ἀπεκαθισθε (A I 203)
2. επειρε-ους εὴ ἠπειρεστής εῇς ἡ ἠεπειρει ἔναι (IV 187)
3. ἁπται εἷς ἐσεβας οὖς ζισσε (Wess. 9 163d)
   {NB: εσεβας "which is there", "yonder", rel. present predicating an adverb}
4. ἁπετατυπε (BM 253f. 159)
5. ἁπογί-άρας ἁτοτοτ (III 57)
   {NB: ἁτοτοτ: the preposition ἁτω with the 1st sgl. suffix (-τ
zeroed after a final -τ)}
6. ἁπογί οὐγκε-πνοεὶς αὐς ἁπογίπως κακῷ θευπρασίας ἡνασαίον (Ch. 120)
7. ἀλεξανδρος πνευμονᾶς αὐς ὀν πνεῦμον πνευμονᾷ αὐ-
   σαξσ λοβάς ζωῆς ἀρη-αρτεῖας ἔνεις τοις αὑς ἁπογίοξω κακοτι
   ζιωτορτί (III 32)
   {NB: ζωῆς: 3rd person plural with ζωή-, see ζωή-}
8. εὐχαι-ΝΕΙΣΕΟΥΜΑΤ ζα-πνογ ζιευκόμε θανκ (III 21)
   {NB: σκογ, σκογμέ are 1st sgl. and 2nd sgl. fem. pronomi-
nal objects of cooyh; ἅπο- 2nd sgl. fem. actor. ἀnova reinforce or augens)
9. ἅπο-τητε Ἐητ ἠμνογε (Leyd. 317)
   {NB: ἅπο- 2nd sgl. fem. form of the neg. perfect; Ἐητ = "before"
10. ἡμογόντ (III 158)
    {NB: -οντ 1st sgl. object zeroed after the final -τ of the pronominal
    form of ἡμε}
11. ἁπενηθτ ὧογε Ἐητ ὧογε ἁνεκαφί ὧογε ἁπε-
    ἀνοβε ρω ὧονιν ἑν ἁημαξε ἡαθνον ὧογε ἑραι
    Ἐητ (IV 23)
    {NB: Ἐητ possessed form of Ἐη (1st plural possessor})
12. ἁπεναψς ἁπετοτε ἁπερήειν ἁπεχνίο ἁπεθδωντ ἁπε-
    καρογ ἁπεβαξε ... ἁματε ἁτειμνε ἑρωμε ετηφνοβε
    ετεγψυχη (A 1 80)

6.1.1 THE PERFECT CONVERTED (Tables C(I)1, G)
(a) Circumstantial ε-ἀηκωτὴ "he having heard", "after/since he had
    heard"; adnominal; "... and then he heard" (in narrative) (27-30)
    Negative ε-ἀηκωτὴ
(b) Relative ἐντ-ἀηκωτὴ (ἐποη) "who (whom) he heard/has
    heard" (31-33)
    Negative ετε-ἀηκωτὴ (ἐποη)
    NB: the relative perfect is often written ἐντ-ἀηκωτὴ
(c) Second Tense (Second Perfect) ἐντ-ἀηκωτὴ "(It is ...) that he
    heard/has heard" (34-38)
    Negative ετε-ἀηκωτὴ "(It is ...) that he did not hear/has not
    heard", ἐνταξκωτη ... ἕν "(it is) not (...) that he heard/has
    heard"
    NB: the Second Perfect (affirmative) is often written ἐντ-ἀηκωτὴ
(d) Preterite ἐν-ἀηκωτὴ "he had heard" (40-41). (In the protasis of a
    hypothetical condition ἐνενταξκωτὴ)
    Negative ἐν-ἀηκωτὴ (ἐνενταξκωτὴ in the protasis of a
    hypothetical condition).
    NB: the preterite form is often followed by ἐνε, the function of
    which is not entirely clear. It seems to characterize the preterite
    form as background.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 423-424, 376; Steindorff parr. 374, 378, 465, 472; Till parr. 316,
THE FORMAL-FUNCTIONAL SYSTEM

*Nom. Transposition parr. 16-18

(a) Circumstantial:

1. ακτή-την καν επερώσαε ετ τονκε εακπαραβα δε
   γωνα κενκεκεσαχε τηρογ (III 64)
   {NB: γωνα see γωτ}

2. ακμεμιττι παραπεμιπυα εακτ τοπεκμνογεννες ἡμιρε
   γαρον (RE 10 162a)
   {NB: κεμεττι see κεν (verb); γαρον see γαρ-}

3. ἢμοιοι μιππεξες γιτη-πβαπτιμα εαγτομες ημαια σιτηπ
   βαπτιμα επεμικογ (Ch. 166)
   {NB: ημαια see ηνι-}
   [OBS: εαγτομει the 3rd person plural actor with a direct object to the infinitive convey a notion corresponding to the passive voice]

4. αγναγ εποιοεις ηπεοου ιτ εαμει νογμορφη νηπηρελ ετ
   ινιει τιν ην αυ σιν ιιπη ωπη ἡμπερφερη
   γωμβ (IV 36)
   {NB: ετινειτι see ετινε-}

5. ετινε-ογ ακσιατηθαι κα-κημος εξι καμε εμπεκκωστα
   δε
   γιαο γακω-κη κενκεκεσαχε τηρογ (III 64)

6. μεσακ ιακια-κοινε νυνητη ηηθη-θυηθε ημπειεινε (III 139)
   {NB: ηηθηθθηθη see ηηθη-}

7. ηπικακα-κα-καβαβ αβργμπαλλαγ ησαχε ηπικαθαμον εροο
   (III 94)

8. αγωονυ νηγωτ ουεινε η ουεοτν νηγωτ αυ σιν ογρομπα
   ακ ηπεντ τονγεκα ιακ (RE 10 164)
   {NB: ηπεντ = εμππεντ-}
   [OBS. The circumstantial converter is often zeroed before a syllabic nasal consonant (ι or η)]

(b) Relative:

1. πεικελαγος ενταγει εκω-κ (III 220)

2. ππαμοε κεα-πνονε τςειος αυ ιεαθοκ (III 27)

3. ηκοογε τηρογ ενταθοογ (III 64)
   [OBS. Note the position of the reinforcer (augens) which, while expanding the object suffix in ηκοογ, occurs in the second position of the prosodic unit]

4. πενταπαλλασ ημον (Ch. 118)
(c) Second Perfect:

1. Ñtayí-ýíno erwtí eteñenygínye eýouy (III 143)
   {NB: eteñ- is emphasized by the Second Perfect: “It is because of... that...”; eýouy “which are evil”, relative present}

2. Òpetógy ñoywêt ei eýouy eneiryagnwy eteñihere eteñma
   {NB: eteñenouy is emphasized by the Second Perfect: “It is in order to... that...”}

3. Íwìm ñtayalay. ñtayalay throgy eteñenouyçay (A II 436f.)
   {NB: the first ñtay- is the relative, the second Second Perfect, emphasizing eteñ-}

(d) Preterite:

1. Ñeagíe pe eteñenapologiá (A II 44)
   {NB: pe a “backgrounding” morpheme often accompanying the preterite conversion}

2. Ñeagíe- naion (III 37)

3. Ñeagíe gar épata ñtekkânciá (III 37)
   {NB: aeg... épata = see wa}

4. Ñeagíe gar xo-oyanakaión pe etikhâny eýáxay (A II 44)
   {NB: -c 3rd sgl. feminine object of wtt, “it”, the fem. pronoun in a
"neuter" sense; ἐνθάκαγ the infinitive (κω, with a 3rd person plural object) negativised by τῷ
5. ἐσεντανογωσὺ τὰ πὲ εὐγναζέ ἐκ檩πὸς ἐσεντακῶσος
(you would not escape their vengeance) (Ch. 95)

6.2 THE AORIST BASE (Table C(I)2):

Affirmative: ὑα- + pronominal actor + infinitive – ὑαφεσωτὶ
ὑαρε- + nominal (dem./indef./2nd sgl. fem.) actor +
infinite – ὑαρεψῳμε σωτὶ
Negative: με- + pronominal actor + infinitive – μεπεσωτὶ
μερε- + nominal (dem./indef./2nd sgl. fem.) actor + infinitive
– μερεψῳμε σωτὶ

The Coptic aorist expresses timelessness, a general truth, habitude, propensity, natural consequence, approx. corresponding to the English Present Simple. The negative aorist expresses also the lack of (natural) ability ("He cannot ", "It is not in his nature to ").

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 377, 393, 396; Steindorff parr. 342-343, 364-365; Till parr. 304-305; Vergote par. 150(3); Lambdin par. 28.1; Young, "Present I"

(a) Affirmative:
1. ὑαγαφὸς ετε-πνοι αὐ-ὑαφ-γοτε ẑητὶ ἡπρῳμε εʔκν
καγῳ (A I 260)
{NB: ẑητ- μ the construction of the preposition ẑητ- with a
noun. εʔκν καγῳ circumstantial present, "when he is naked")

2. ὑαφε-ὑαψῳβε ἦντε ἡπνοοῦτε ὑπῆδα ... ὑαψῳβε ὑν ὑπαικασὶα ἡπακὶ ἰδονῆς ἂγω πτῆβο ὑπᾶψῳβ (P 130.4
104 123)
3. ψαρετςίο ἡποεκ ἡπμοογ ... ψαρετςίο ὑν ὑποοβε
πνοβε (III 204)
{NB: both actor of the aorist and object of τςίο are the 2nd sgl.
 fem. zero pronoun (reflexive object))
4. (The dead sheep, once it is dead,) ὑαφ-πνογ (i.e. the wild
beasts') ὑαψῳμε ὑαγ ἐρε (III 47)
5. ψαρε-παςε τὰ ὑπεψῳβε εὶρε ἡπομήτωαγτε (IV 80)
6. ψαρεμοστε τὰ τούης-οὐφ-τὼν (III 122)

7 ἐπὶμα ἡπο(proc ἡπομορος ἡπῳμε ψαρετςίταγασος
FIRST PART

8. ἡν χωρίς ταύτα ἡ κοινή ὑφεψεῖν ὑψωτέρες ἑπανογγυ (E 73)
   {NB: ἑπανογγυ adnominal circumstantial Adjective Verb, qualifying (sections 22.1, 22.5, 27.) “that is good”}

9. ἡν ὑφεψεῖν ἐπονοῦσα ἑγούσα ἑγάνεα ἑψοβε (Ch. 103)
   {NB: the infinitive of the aorist is ἑψοβε. The circumstantial perfect qualifies ρωμε}

10. ἃνεισε ὑφεψεῖν-νοούσα ὑφων ἡπεὐσεοῦσα τηρᾶ ἑγούσα ἐπάγον πρᾶδε-ἀμερίτω ἑγούσα-πεῖκον ἑγούσα ἑπερεῖστ ἢστε ὑπερμαία (IV 128)
    {NB: ἢστε- the pronominal form of the infinitive ἡ (i.e. its alternate form before a nominal object)}

(b) Negative:

1. ἃπα ὑφεψεούσα ἐγιόου θεός ἡμᾶς ἴων ὑνικοί-ογγυν ἱαοῦσα (IV 38)
   {NB: ἡμᾶς see ἡμ-

2. ἡπεῖνται ἐπονοῦσα (Z 189)

3. ἐπε-ταυξή ἐπονοῦσα ἡμερικότερα ἡπεῖκον ἡμερίτα ἑπικιούσα ἡπειρρέοι (IV 194)
   {NB: ἡπειρρέοι relative present; for the verb, see ἐπονοῦσα}

4. ἡπεῖκον ὅδεν ἐκοῖτα ἦν ὑπερμένη ἡπεῖκον ὑπερμένη ἡπεῖκον (IV 52)
   {NB: ἡπεῖκον relative present, with ὅδεν (see ὅδε, δίδε) and other infinitives: “be able”}

5. ἗τε-ογγυς ἡμερ-πεῖκον ἐπειβάλον ἤνοιγμε (Π 435)
   {NB: ἤνοιγμε “even in the...”}

6. ἡμερίτα ἐρεύγυ (Ch. 24)

7. ἡμερίτα ἐρεύγυ (Ch. 103)

6.2.1 THE AORIST CONVERTED (Tables C(I)2, G)

(a) Circumstantial: ἐ-ὑπεψεῖν adnominal (“who hears”, qualifying an indefinite nucleus; 27)
   Negative ἐ-ὑπεψεῖν “who/when he does not, cannot hear” (27-30)

(b) Relative: ἐ-ὑπεψεῖν “who hears” (31-33)
   Negative ἐ-ὑπεψεῖν ἐτε-ὑπεψεῖν “who cannot, does not hear”
(c) Second Tense (Second Aorist): ἔ-ὑχεσωτᾶ "(It is ...) that he hears" (34-38)

*Negative* ὑχεσωτᾶ ... ἄν ... "(It is) not ... that he hears"

(d) Preterite: ἰ-ὑχεσωτᾶ "He would hear", expressing past habit/propensity (39-40)

*Negative* ἰ-μερχωτᾶ

**BIBLIOGRAPHY:**

STERN parr. 426, 427, 433-434; STEINDORFF parr. 374, 378, 465, 474; TILI. parr. 327, 334, 461-462; VERCOTE parr. 163(4), 164(5), 165(5), 166(5); LAMBDIN parr. 28.1; POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System" parr. 10-11, 16-18

(a) Circumstantial:

1. γενεθὼ ἐυχήνοδογ (IV 85)
2. πνεοέπσαν ντρίπτες παίνε πς ἔμεσι-2ο (III 129)
3. οὐσιων ἑώχινογ (P 130.2 88 10)
4. (They say "we are praying") ἐμεγάλωβ (III 92)
5. (They that enter the House of God) ἐμηπροσεχε ἃγες-
   καζέ (IV 38)
   {NB: ἃγεςκαζέ = ἄγεςκαζε the preposition ἐ- (governed by προσεχέ) zeroed before the syllabic nasal}
6. (We have the Tree of Life, the Cross, shining day and night)
   ἐμερεπερογοεῖν ἄτομτή ἐμεγά (III 94)

(b) Relative:

1. με-ξανε ἐτεψωαποῦααζε ἄαγ (A II 433)
   {NB: ἐ-ααγ see εἰρεπ}
2. πνουύμε εὔακρεί εἰκαζ-πκαζ (Ch. 11)
   {NB: πνούμ: see 2υογ}
3. πνιτ ἐτεμεφκοτά (P 131.6 81 90)
4. ἐτεψαγῆ ἐβαλ ἄτετεραπεζα (III 78)
   [OBS. The def. article antecedent of the relative ἐτεψαγ- "the one
   who..."]
5. μὴ ἐτηπερε-κοοιες ὄγε τοολε ἄκο ἄιητη (A II 237
   = Mt. 6:20))
   {NB: ἄιητη see 2ή-}
6. ἴκποτ ἐτεψάκαβκε εῖςοῦν ἄιητογ ὑρ-ντε-νοῦκ ἕν
   (Ch. 23)
   {NB: ντε-νοῦκ ἑ determined relative form of the delocutive
   Nominal sentence}
7. μὴ πεψαγε ἰε μεγτωογν 2ολως (Leyd. 345)
   {NB: πεψαγ- determined relative aorist, "the one who..."}
8. ηετεμεγεσι άτωρη αγώ όπι ηνετενογου αν αν (IV 99)
   {NB: ηετεμεγεσι dct. rel. negated Nominal Sentence: “they
   , that are not…”; ηνετενογου αν αν see note to text 6}
9. ηενεγιε ετεμεσε (A I 197)
10. ταί τε Θε εσωκτωογν ήνωγησωτ εβολ (III 149)

(c) Second Aorist:

1. εσωκ-εςε οιες ηας-ανωκαε εσωκ-εςε ηνογησωτακ
   (III 32)
   {NB: ηιι- is emphasized by the Second Aorist (“It is... that...”)}
2. εσωκαντιν- ταρεθ άν γιτιν- ογοεικ (A II 438)
   {NB: γιτιν- is emphasized by the Second Aorist (“It is not...
   , that...”)}
   [ΟBS. The negatiive άν negatiives the nexus (the subject-predicate
   relation, corresponding to “it is…”) between the Second Aorist
   (“that...”) and the adverb]
3. ηετοκου εσωκε- ηεγγκα έι εβολ ηνηγτογ εσωκαωκ εν-
   σωκα η- οετογκον άθησογ (Wess. 9 145b)
   {NB: ηετοκου “they who die”, determined relative present; so
   too οετογκον άθησογ “they whom they beget”. ε- is empha-
   sized by the Second Aorist}

(d) Preterite:

1. εσωκαε αε ηνεκεφηνε εικεκοογε εκουωγον εσωκα-
   αγ πε αγώ ηεσκακοογ… αγώ ηεμεπε- ηειε άθησογ
   πε (III 149)
   {NB: εκουωγον circumstantial conversion of the Adjective Verb
   (sections 22.2, 22.5, 27.1), qualifying ηεκοογε; ηαγ see ειε;
   άθησογ see αγ; άθησογ 3rd plural pronoun after the preposition η-
   introducing the direct object}
2. εσωκεφεηνα (III 203)
   {NB: 2nd sgl. fem. actor}
3. ηαγ ηεκον εετεκεκακ άηηη άθηηη άηηη ηεκεην άθηηη-
   αον κα ηεκεηη άαε γιβολ (A I 475)
   {NB: άθηηη, άηηη det. relative present, the first predicating
   the adverb άηηη “there” (“they who are there”, “they yonder”,
   “those”), the second a stative (section 16.1.1, “they who are
   coming”)}
6.3 ἂπαιτεῖσθαι "NOT YET" (Table C(1)3):

 ámbate- + pronominal actor + infinitive – ámbatem
 ámbate- + nominal (dem./indef./2nd sgl. fem.) actor + infinitive – ámbateπρωθε  σωτὴν "He/the man has not yet heard"

Bibliography:
Stern parr. 395; Steindorff parr. 362-363; Till parr. 320; Vergote parr. 159(2);
Lambdin parr. 30.5

1. ἂπαιτογνοικ ὅ τω ενεστεκὼς (III 103)
   {NB: ὅ = the pronominal form ("state") of the verb ὅγανε i.e.
   its alterant form before a pronominal direct object. ὅπαστος
   the plural form of ὅπαστος}

2. ἂπαιτε-τεκνίσις ῥα ἐγκαλεῖ ἡμῖν ἡμῖν καταπίσει
   ὀγδά ἂπαιτεσειν ἡμῶν τοῖς τούτοις ἡμᾶς ἡμῶν ἡμᾶς ἡμῶν ἡμᾶς ἡμῶν (III 224)
   {NB: τεκνίσις = κτισίς. κοινωνία pronominal form of κοινωνία}

3. ἂπαιτενεκτίς ὅ ὅ = σα-νεκτίς (IV 34)

4. ἂπαιτείς ὅ τω εὐσελ ἡτοπεράσοι ἁπαθειοῦν ἡπαθειοῦν ἡπαθειοῦν ἡπαθειοῦν ἡπαθειοῦν ἡπάθειοι ἡπάθειοι ἡπάθειοι εἴρηται ἡπάθειοι εἴρηται ἡπάθειοι αὐθαίρεται ἡπάθειοι αὐθαίρεται ἡπάθειοι αὐθαίρεται ἡπάθειοι αὐθαίρεται ἡπάθειοι (A I 103)
   {NB: ἂπαιτισθεῖν: pl. possessive prounoun + det. relative present
   ("that which is evil"); ἂπα- see ἰναι. ἡμᾶς 1st sgl. form of ἡμᾶς}

6.3.1 ἂπαιτεῖσθαι ("Not Yet") CONVERTED (Tables C 3, G)

(a) Circumstantial ἂπαιτεῖσθαι "before he has heard"; also
   adnominal (27-30). Note the especially prevalent ἄνθα (ἐ)ἀπαιτεῖ-
   σωτὴ (ἀπε- ἂτο "before")

(b) Relative (ἐτε-ἀπαιτεῖσθαι) "who has not yet heard" (31-33)

Bibliography:
Stern parr. 437; Steindorff parr. 378, 465; Till parr. 320, 327-328, 461-462;
Vergote parr. 164(4), 165(4); Lambdin parr. 30.5; Polotsky, "Conjugation
System" parr. 10-11, 16-18

(a) Circumstantial:

1. ἡμεγογόνε ἰν-ν ἑπαιτογικότε ἀκο ἡμεγα-ζεμναγ
   ἱναμακαίον ἱντὴ (A II 147)
   {NB: ἰν- pronominal form of ἰνα}
2. αἰτεῦσχε ἡνοῦε εἱματέει ανεφεσελα (Wess. 9 144c)
3. τηντριήνην πε εἰνε ἔκ-αλοντενουν γαω γενου υε
    νενογυε τεμπα-πεναε ωακι (IV 20)
    {NB: divide τ-υντ-ρη-η-ήντ}
4. σχογων ἤπατογνωκε εστεπροσφορα (Ch. 50)
    {NB: σχογων present (section 15.1) "they cat". ἤπατωγ= εἱματωγ, with the converter ε- zeroed before the syllabic nasal}
5. ἤπεεω-ςι ερο ωλ-πηεσωμιετ η πηεςγτοοο γησοογ
    ἤπατετηϊνοον μαν ἰνογουαξε ἰνκαξ ηηήν (Z 397)
    {NB: the actor of ἤπεε-, ἤπατε- (= εἱματε-) and possessor in the possessive article νογ- is the 2nd sgl. fem. zero suffix pronoun.
This is a rhetorical question.)
6. γενουρε κωμ ... ἤπατογνοει εσηλικια (IV 103)
    {NB: ἤπατογ= εἱματωγ}
7. (Christ, who existed with His Father) εἱματατιμε-αγελοκ
    ωγε ταραγελοκ γαω ἵδον μηςκαρδιν (Z 246)
8. (How many tribulations have weighed upon you) γαεν ἤπατεει
    εγογν επιβοε (III 105)
9. γαεν γαρ ἤπατογο-κοινωνια μημεν (we used not to fear that
    our clothes might be stolen) (IV 105)

(b) Relative:
1. πενειωτ ἰναλο ... παε ετεπατηφωκε καίηαγηςκ εραη
    ἰνπαγγετε (III 142)
    {NB: ἰναη- the form of the perfect (actually Second Perfect)
    following καί- "since"}
2. νετεπατωγ ει εραη ερο (i.e. down to moral disease) (IV 20)
3. ωγον γαρ κεν ετεπατογνωκαν μηςεκκακα (III 77)
    {NB: σχογων= pronominal state of ωγον; ε alternant of κ after a nasal (here a 2nd sgl. masc. suffix as object)}

6.4 "THE OPTATIVE" (or "THIRD FUTURE", Table C(I)4):

Affirmative: ε- + pronominal actor + ε- + infinitive - εηεςωτη
    εηε- + nominal (dem./indef./2nd sgl. fem.) actor +
    infinitive - εηεςψωεε ωτη
Negative: ἰηε- + nominal/pronominal actor + infinitive - ἰηεςηεω-
    τη, ἰηεςψωεε ωτη

(a-b) The optative expresses wish, with shades of meaning varying
according to the actor person and to whether the form is affirmative
or negative. In the 1st persons: willingness/unwillingness, intent, agreement/refusal, exhortation/prohibition. In the 2nd persons: request, desire, polite demand (negative request, prohibition). In the 3rd persons: wish, desire, prayer, "prophetic future".

(c) Following ἥκε- ("that") or ἥκα(α)ς (originally "that let it", in the negative constructed with the circumstantial optative ἐνεκτ-). The optative, affirmative or negative, expresses in all persons purpose ("final clause", "in order that ...") and result ("consecutive clause", "so that ...")

NB: except for the circumstantial negative optative after ἥκα(α)ς (多种形式 ἐνεκτ-), the optative is not converted.

(a) Affirmative:

1. ΠΝΟΥΤΕ ἑφεκε ἭΑΙ ἨΒΟΛ (Wess. 9 163α)
2. ἔγεζαρες ἩΝΑΧΕ ΤΗΡΟΥ ἩΓΝΑΝΕΙΟΤΕ зыва ΗΜΟΟΥ ἑ-
   τοτη (IV 65)
   {NB: ἩΝΑΧΕ = ἐφΗΑΧΕ. ΕΤΟΤΗ ΚΕ ΕΤΗ (1st plur. suffix
   after the pronominal form of the preposition)}
3. ΠΕΥΣΧΟΠ ΕΝΕΥΣΗΠΕ ΕΡΓΑΙ ἩΕΝ-ΤΕΥΤΑΤΕ (III 143)
4. ΠΝΟΥΤΕ ΕΝΕΥΣΗΠΟΥ ΕΡΟΟΥ ΔΑΥ ἔγεζαρες ἑροού ἐξωβ ΝΗΜ
   ἐξωούου ΔΑΥ ἑϝετ- ΗΤΟΝ ΝΑΥ ζηνητόν ΝΗΜ (IV 116)
   {NB: ἑξωούου "that is evil", adnominal circumstantial present}
5. (The houses which we have built in the name of your glory)
   ἐκέμαζογ ΗΡΩΗΕ ΕΠΩΗΖ ἐκεμαζογ ΗΗΑΟΣ ΕΠΩΗΖ (III
   218)
   {NB: ΗΗΑΟΣ pronominal form of the infinitive ΜΟΥΣ with 3rd
   plur. object}
6. ἔγεζαρες ΕΝΕΠΕΤΝΑΝΟΥΟΥ (III 203)
   {NB: Η-ΠΕΤΝΑΝΟΥΟΥ plur.-definite nominalized relative of the
   "Adjective Verb" ΝΑΝΟΥ (sections 22.1, 31.1.1) after the preposition
   ε- governed by ἡρετ-: "those that are good")
7. ΕΚΕΤ ΝΑΙ ΗΠΕΚΟΥΓΧΑΙ (IV 74)
8. ΕΤΕΤΝΕΜΟΟΥΕ ΖΗ-ΠΑΖΟΥ ΗΗΕΣΗΗΥ (IV 62)
   {NB: ΗΗΕΣΗΗΥ see con}
9. ἔφεξαοις εἷναι εῷρη ΕΧΟΤΟΥ ΗΠΗΑΖΟΥ ΤΗΡΗ ΕΤΣΗΖ
   ζηνητριαφή ΤΗΡΟΥ ΔΑΥ ΗΕΤΖΗΖ ΗΗΠΕΙΧΩΗΗΕ ... ΔΑΥ ΕΡΕ-
   ΧΟΙΣΗΗΕ ΜΟΥΡΗ ΗΤΟΡΗΗ ΗΗΠΕΤΣΩΝΤ ΕΡΟΟΥ ΕΡΟΟΥ ζηνητρώου
   ΗΤΟΡΗΗ (IV 207)
   {NB: ΕΤΣΗΖ relative present, predicating a stative (section 16.1.1)
   qualifying the antecedent ΠΗΑΖΟΥ: "that is written"
10. ΕΚΕΧΟΥΤΩΝΗ (IV 75)
(b) Negative:

1. ἰνεκτὸς·-νοεῖκ ἰνεκτῶς ἰνεκτοιογε ἰνεκτὴ-μὴτρε ἰνοῦχ (III 64)
2. ἰνεκτὸς ερῶν ἁγῶ ἰνεκτεριτῆ ἄλλα ἐφεσῳσπε ναν ἵογκαξε ετβεπνοὺγε επεκνο ἅπε (IV 128)
   {NB: μερίτ = pronominal form of the infinitive με}
   [OBS. Note the concessive (“even though”) or adversative (“although”) meaning of the circumstantial Nominal Sentence]
3. ἰνεκτωπε (III 116)
   [OBS. This is the native Coptic correspondent to the Greek-origin μη γενοίτο]
4. ἰνεκτοιογε ἰνεκτὴ-μὴτρε ἰνοῦχ ἰνεκτικό-δολ ἰνεκταῦ ἰκρογ ἵογκσωπ (III’20, oath upon entering Shenoute’s monastery)
5. πίσων ἰε ἰταξε: εκσωγ ἁγῶ τορμ ἰνεκτος εβολ ἰμοογ (Ch. 124)
6. ἰνεκτρῆ ὦης ενω (IV 168)
   [OBS. Note the generic use of the zero-determined noun, common in the textual genre of instructions and precepts; cf. also texts 8-9, 11]
7. ἰνεκταῦ ἰτςιμε ἤητ-θυτῆ ὦξε ἰμλαὰ ἰτρωμε (IV 63)
   {NB: -θυτῆ a “heavy” form of the suffixed 2nd person plural, following the pronominal and not the pronominal form of the infinitive)
8. ἰνεκταῖς τραὶ ἤητε ἰτ-ταξρε ερωμε γιβολ (IV 160)
9. ἰτρωμε βοκ ἐρωσι εμπατεκέσσηνυ τρογος εμωξσ εμαγ (IV 51)
10. (Books which we do not have and which we need) ἰτεκτωπ-ωινε ἰκσωγ γιβολ αἱβ-πολα (IV 72)
    {NB: -εω- or -ω- after a vowel, preceding the infinitive: “be able to...”. ἰκσωγ see ικσα-}
11. ἰτρωμε νοκές ἰτρωμε τραὶ ἤητη εйте ζουοτ εйте εςις (IV 80)
12. ἰτεκτόν ἰνοῦχ εκε ἰε ἰτεκανας ἰπκσεες (III 66)

(c) Clauses of purpose and result:

1. αδκοορογ εβολ ενεκτρα ἄεκας εγεσῳσπε ζιουμητ- γίομο μπογιοτηκε (III 99)
2. αἰματιγογ ἰμωτῆ πε-ἰνετηρνοβε (RE 10 164)
3. ετε-ογ βε ὄν ἁρεειρε ἰνινοσ ἰπεβοογ ἰπεκτο εβολ
THE FORMAL-FUNCTIONAL SYSTEM

χιν-νογνομ ἵρωμε ψα-νουγρηρε ψιλμ ιγυ χιν-νογνομ
νεγμε ψα-νουγκρηρε ψιμε δεκασ ερεβηκ ερατη ἰνογ-
στοτη μνογρημε (III 199)
{NB: πεθοομ = πετ-200γ: nominalized relative present, here
zero-determinated: "(anything) that is evil"; 2nd sgl. fem. actor and
possessor.}

4. (You touch and eat every impurity) δεκασ εγεμεστω εβολ
τη-τε μνεματελος (III 203)
{NB: μεστω 2nd sgl. fem. object with the infinitive μοστε}

5. (Let him eat his bread in righteousness) δε-μνεμωπε ναχ
εγωνα (IV 78)
{NB: εγ- the preposition ε- before the indefinite article}

6. (They fear the angel) δε-μνεματασασ χε-μοοογ (IV 21)

7. ουκακανωυτικε εαγιτη μαμα δε-εκεσασ (IV 62)
{NB: εαγιτη circumstantial perfect, qualifying the indefinite noun;
the pronominal form of the infinitive εινε}

7. THE DEPENDENT CLAUSE CONJUGATION (Table C b):
conjugation forms (verbal sentence forms) that do not occur independ-
ently. While they too consist of a verb-phrase (‘base ... infinitive’) with an
infixed theme actor (noun or pronoun): # base + actor + infinitive #,
they differ formally from the main-sentence conjugation pattern (section 6)
in their negation:

(pronominal actor) # base + actor + -τη- + infinitive #
(e.g. ιντερεσ-τη-ειστι "since he did not hear")
(nominal actor) # base + -τη- + actor + infinitive #
(e.g. ιντερες-τη- πρωμε ειστι "since the man did not hear").

Being by themselves in dependent status, the dependent-clause conjuga-
tion forms are not converted.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Polotsky, "Conjugation System" parr. 1-4, 7, 27; Vergeote par. 161

7.1 "UNTIL" (Table C(II)I): ωατηςεωτι
ωατη- + pronominal actor + infinitive: ωατηςεωτι
ωατε- + nominal/dem./indefinite/interr./2nd sgl. fem. actor + infinitive: ωατεπρωμε εοτι "... until he hears/heard", in narrative or
dialogue.
1. ἄγχο-βολ γαρ εἰςεχθῇ γρηγορίε ηδρίκηκες ὑπάντησε εἰς τῇ ἐπίγνωσιν ἐκεῖνος ἑκατος (III 103)
   (NB: ἡ-π-ᾳ-ἡ-κήμη)
2. ἤποιγε εβολ ὡπῆ (i.e. out of sin) ὑποτείγει ετοτόῃ ἤναντε (P 130.5 59 vo)
3. ἢπε-νετίμαγ εἰ χαρτεινοῦς βοϊβ έροογ (III 143)
   (NB: ηε-νετίμαγ: determinated relative, predicating ἠνογ “there, yonder”: “they who are yonder”, “those”)
4. πεσμεν ἰπογ γ... ἦμεσμεν εἰς καλ-οεός ἦτομός ἐπιθρᾳ γραφεῖ ἡγηγετε εἰς τον ἑτε κοι
   χωντόκες εβολ τηγαν-πηγος ηκαβατον ὑποτεινε εβολ γρηγορος ἦπακα (IV 58)
   (NB: πεσμεν ἰπογ is here adverbial: “during...”; κα- prenominal (“construct”) form of the infinitive κω)
5. ἄρεχερε-γῆς δε στεν ες χαρτεινοῦς ἰπογοκακε
   κερο δε στεν ἤπωτε μετες εβολ-γαγον κατα τετεχενε χαρτεινοῦς ἰπογοκακε χατομύθτατς εοτε (P 130.2 24 554f.)
   (NB: ἄρε-, χαρτ-, πογ-, τογ- are all 2nd sg. fem. (zero suffix) forms, of tense base and possessive article. κερο imperative)
6. χαρτεθευ ωυπε ενῃ-ειςικε (III 18)
   (NB: ενῃ-ειςικε circumstantial present predicating an adverb (prepositional phrase γη-; 19.1.1) “that (lit. “as, while”) we are in these straits”)
   [OBS. χαρτεθευ ωυπε is usually complemented by the circumstantial conversion]
7. χαλωθάνα χαρτηγ χατογ επτο ἦπεκ (A I 467)
8. ἤποιγονογ εβολ γρηγορα ἦσελετ ευτε ἤποιγος-εις βαλε βαθ εντομικοεις ει
   (A I 63)

7.2 THE TEMPORAL (Table C(II)2): ἀποτελεσμα

ἀποτελε- + nominal/pronominal actor + infinitive: ἀποτελεσμα
ἀποτελησμα εστι

The Temporal expresses temporal and/or causal dependance, especially anterior or background action or event, and may be translated by
English "after/since he (had heard)": ἤτερεςε θωτι is a narrative form, with the main clause following (or preceding) it normally being the perfect θωτι.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern par. 425; Steindorff parr. 441, 447-450; Till par. 319; Vergote par. 161(3); Lambdin par. 13.1

1. άρατι εκάτε άτεριξι άνεςςαι άτεκτήτειστ ι (III 13)
2. άτεριξιποι άξι-αναμμένωντα τε άτερεςκει ηι εσγαι εσγι-
   τεκτάκατι άνεςκος καταζητήκαση άνεςγυθε ημιοτη έσωρ ας
   έημερος ημιοτη (III 33)
3. άτερογογοιρ άκμων κα άκμων άνθι (III 43)
4. άτερογογοιρ άηπρωμε καταζητηκαθων αγω καταπεγειις
   καταζηγγας απόγονες νιην εκογον εςρακ άνουνον ρωκτ
   (IV 37)
   {NB: εςρακ - see εςράκ}
5. αντικά ιμήτ άτεριξκωμί εσωραε ιηςκοα απόγονες (III 14)
6. άτερίξη-και ας αμει ψανθήκες ητρή αγω άτερίξη-
   πρως ... αποκομές καρικαριος ογωθίκ (III 29)
   {NB: κα- is the prenominal form of the infinitive αγω}
7. αςωραε ας άνουνοι άτεριξκωμί εσωραε ιηςκοα απόγονες (III 14)
   άκτεςκωτηρ αγω άης-απρ-ρωμε άκμωνι άηςγίρκαμε
   αςγονεις ιηςκοθι ρωκτήκες άνουνοι ρωκτήθρας (Cal. 41)
8. άτερεκαςιν γαρ ζωτι πονεκόν αγκι-κα άνκον (P 131.4
   141 40)
   {OBS. ά/άνκο- introduces the direct object of a compound verb
   (auxiliary + zero-det. noun)}
9. άτερεκοκτικ ιε τογοτεα παντοκρατωρ νιην εκογον
   εςρακ άνουνον ρωκτ άςωραε άνουνοι άηςγίρκα κονος
   αςγιμ ητρή άςωραε άκμωνι άηςγογονι άηςγόδια επεγ-
   ζωρ αςκον άιπας (Cal. 43)
   {NB: κονος adnominal circumstantial present, qualifying the
   indefinite noun ("which is alive")

7.3 THE CONDITIONAL (Table C(II)3): έςωραςικωμί
e- + pronominal actor + -ςωρα-, + infinitive: ε-ςωραςικωμί
eςωρα-, + nominal/dem./indefinite/2nd sgl. fem. actor + infinitive:>
ςωραςικωμί
εφαν- + -τι- + nom. (etc.) actor + infinitive: εφαν-τις-πρως-εώς

The Coptic Conditional corresponds averagely to an “if and when” conditional clause in English. The conjugation form may be preceded by σωτα ("whenever", esp. "as soon as"), εγώ "should it happen") or καν ("even if", "even though"). See below, 42-43.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 420-421; STEINDORFF parr. 328; 421, 492-494, 496; TILL parr. 447-448; VERGOTE par. 161(5); LAMBDIN par. 29.1

(a) Affirmative:
1. εφανείρε ε阺 ιτιμς ἄνταε-τις-αντείς-τις-εώς οποια εφαν-εisposable αντείς-τις-εώς αντείς-τις-εώς (III 112)
   {NB: ταίς- prenominal ("construct state") of ταίο}
2. ετετίηνανμου γνετετίητανσατε μι-τετίηταντουτε ζωτετίησκε ιμερεις ιδαλεμοιον (III 48)
   {NB: ωσπε- μ- "become (as)"
   [OBS. The aorist is a characteristic result clause ("apodosis") after the Conditional]
3. (In monastic instructions:) εγγανκωλζ επιμα νογομε νιεροις-
   με νατις δω (IV 103)
4. (Of flies:) ωγονως εχι-πεβιω εφανιντζ (III 48)
5. πμοογ εγγανταζς μιτηπι ωαφογα νογωτ...πρως
   γως εγγανμετεξε επισεμα ετογας ωαφογα νογωτ
   ναμοις (III 52)
   {NB: τας- pronominal state of τας; ι- construct state of ειρε; 
   επισεμα ετογας "the Holy Ghost")
6. εφανανυκ εογοη ενογι νεωρεσλανα εφανεις δε ον
   εβολ ωαρεσλανα εφανανυος εφραi ωαρερως αγω
   εφανατουων ωαρεμελετα (III 203)
   {NB: 2nd sgl. fem. bases and possessive article}
7. νογομε ας τε ουτε νογομε νς πε εγγανμετε-ηνε-
   ρωμε νεχεστογε (A I 95)
   {NB: μετε- construct of μοστε}
8. εφαν-νεσοογ ουςμ μιπετιο εφαμουε εγγανογομι
   ωαρεσως αγω μεχαμελει (RE.II 16a)
THE FORMAL-FUNCTIONAL SYSTEM

(ΝΒ: εψαγο- relative aorist; ογομ- pronominal of ογωμ)

9. 2οταν ερωταντηκε μερεσθενος ωρεννυτε ἔ- βομ ἠπνονε εςραι εξωθ (Ch. 68)

10. (“Come and search my dwellings”) εψωμε εκγακτη-εια-ωλον ενητογ (Ch. 43)
    (ΝΒ: ον- construct of ονε)

11. (“You shall not arise eyeless”) καν εχαθανπορκ ηνεκβαλ (III 105)

12. καν εισαγμον ηνηπαξι- τπε εν ηλααγ ηματημαι (Ch. 107)
    (ΝΒ: ηνηπαξι- an negated future, 1st person sgl. (section 17.1) “I shall not taste”; ηματημαι = εματημα-, circumstantial “not yet” form; “be (proper) time”)
    [ΟBS. The 3rd sgl. masc. in ηματημαι is the “impersonal” neuter, “it” in “it is time”]

(b) Negated:

1. ογοι ηνην ετετηπαντηθεσκ ετεκκανα ε νετετηπαντηθεσκ εβωλ γηπεσωνα εηπεσωνα ογοι δε ον ηνη
   ετετηπαντηθεσκ ε νετετηπαντηθεσκ εβωλ γηπεσωνα ενητημυστηριον ετογασσ ετετηθ ενητ ενα (III 45)
    (ΝΒ: ετογασσ relative present “which is holy”; ετετηθ εν- circumstantial present predicating a stative (section 16.1.1), “you being as ...”)

2. εψαπατητ-νες ηνα-ζενηβει ενα-εποροσεεε εροον 
   μεγερο ωμαχηα (III 170)
    (ΝΒ: εποροσεεε determinated relative present “they that attend”)

3. ερωταντηπητ ηπρωμε αω ςωμη μεγημονε αυτε ερ- 
   ωταντηπητεφυχ αλωμε γητακαθαρσία μεφρατσωθμη 
   μεγυσαν ραμήνασε ραμάλαμ (IV 47.)

4. εψωμε ενεγαπαμεοε εεηαρειμον ενεγαπαμεον 
    ηνεθετεοε (III 129)
    (NB: εεηαρειμον 3rd plural future “They will be estranged”)

5. ενεγαπαμεοε γαρ εταγαθη ηπεκε ηε εαμηαπιον (RE 10 164)
    (ΝΒ: εαμηαπιον 3rd sgl. masc. future “He will rebuke us” (pronominal of απιο))
7.4 THE CONJUNCTIVE (Table C(II)4):

- + pronominal actor + infinitive: ἃς ἐσθή
- + nominal/dem./indefinite/2nd sgl. fem. actor + infinitive: ἄπερσε μεν ἀστή

Negated: - + pronominal actor + -τιμ + infinitive: ἕ- τιμ- κώστι
- + nominal/dem./indefinite/2nd sgl. fem. actor + infinitive: ἄτετιμ- πρωμεν ἀστή

The conjunctive (here but briefly illustrated; see in detail below, sections 42-3) continues preceding verb clauses in a special close kind of coordination ("... and ...") or disjunction ("... or ..."), with most of its verbal semantic features (time reference, mode, sometimes the affirmative: negative distinction) induced by the preceding verb. The conjunctive is also used as a verb-clause form after adverbs and conjunctions.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 441, 443, 445, 447; Steindorff parr. 366-371, 421; Till parr. 321-325; Vergote parr. 161(1); Lambdin parr. 25.2

1. (If the rich man sleeps) ὄλεξ- ἱνοῦντε εἰ ἱκεύλα ἰμον ἱκεφι ἵππεξρίμα τῆς (IV 25)
2. ὦνοβε νέον ὄγωμ- ποιεῖκ ἄγρωμε νέ- τιμ- πεῖς (Ch. 104)
   [OBS. ὄγωμ- construct state of the, infinitive, unmarked orthographically (in writing coinciding with the absolute form)]
3. ὦσώτ ἱς ἐτείσσυχ (IV 200)
   {NB: ὦσώτ imperative}
4. ἐγεταμοὶ ἵς ἱσχυσεν επιλά (III 157)
5. ἐργάνωρμε εἰ ἐγαὶ ἐγαῖο νῆκεμε εἰ Ἴκεψη ἰς ἱς ἱτισε ἢτίτ- ἱταίρη (then those who neglect to tend are to be blamed as unworthy of God's mercy) (IV 99)
6. ὄγρωμε πεντα- πνοῦτε † ναν ἱοῦρμι- ῥίμα δήγενηγ- παρχοντα ἵς ἱκοῦσα ἵς ἱνε- τιμ- πνοῦτε †-εἰςογεία
   ναν ἱοῦσαι ἐβολ ἱς ἱτε (A II 363f.)
   {NB: ὄγρωμε πενταπνοῦτε † ναν... "There was a man to whom God had given...", a narrative opening role of the Cleft Sentence (section 33): ὄγρωμε νε ("It is...") + εἰς- (relative perfect)}
7. (She abandoned herself to the Devil and the demons) ἦς ἱπτομεν ἱμος ἱς ἱς ἱσχυσαν ἐρο (Ch. 121)
8. THE IMPERATIVE — the form of the verb used for commands, instructions and firm requests

**Affirmative:** the imperative is identical with the infinitive, except for (1) a number of special α- prefixed forms of certain verbs, e.g. άχοι "come", αδίκ "say (it)", αναφ "see!", απο- "do (...)!": (2) ηα- prefixed imperatives for the causative lexemes, (e.g. Ματαμ "inform!", for ταμ "to inform"; see Table 1).

**Negative:** Μη- prefixed to the infinitive: Μη- is the actual imperative, meaning "do not ...!".

**BIBLIOGRAPHY:**
STERN parr. 384-385, 398; STEINDORFF parr. 287-292; TILL parr. 297-300; VERGOTE parr. 160(1); LAMBDIN par. 17.1; POLOTSKY, "Modes" p. 76-9.

(a) Affirmative:

1. σχοι ἐφον πνε ἐπε σχοι ἐφον (A II 378)  
[OBS. Note the (obligatory) definite article in addressed nouns ("vocative")]

2. ἐπιται ἡμερατε τωκ ηγήτ (III 179)  
{NB: hēmarē plural of hērēt}

3. ήτο ἡτος καζωτιν εβολ η μαξωρει ηνητ (A I 73)  
[OBS. ηνητ: "dative" prepositional phrase modifying the imperative in a special reflexive mode-of-action (approx. "... away")]

4. ριοτον ριοτον ρι-νειατνογε κολαξε ηνοογ κολαξε  
{NB: hēmarē plural of hērēt} (IV 7)

5. κωτιν επινον ηπρομο ερπαι εξων (Ch. 17)

6. ταας κας επίκ επενηντ ενεκαείκαωμα (A II 320)  
{NB: ταας- pronominal of τα, with the feminine object-suffix -c corresponding to the neutric "it", here announcing the following ε- + infinitive}

7. ηνοογ ζαρες εροογ ηρομε τηννοογον κας (III 24)  
{NB: κας in τηννοογον is the 3rd person plural of a special object pronoun, in most other persons identical in form with the suffix-pronouns: Table A5a,1}

8. Καακ τι-νεχτ ημεκώξε σε-ηνοογι-τος ει εβολ  
{NB: καακ- pronominal of κω_; σε-ην- final clause (above, 6.4)}

9. ζαρες ημερατε τη-ι-τως (P 131.5 1 ro)  
{NB: -τη- negatives the infinitive}

10. Κακ ηναλακτοτον ηπρογκ ητεκταπρο αγω καακ η-  
{NB: hēmarē plural of hērēt}
{NB: ἄνα− pronominal of εἰπέ; ἄν− ἢ “make ... as...”; ἐνακ the conjunctive, coordinated by ἔγω to the imperative}

11. εὐχε-ἀριστοβον ερόκ ἢ ἀριστοβον ερόι κἂ ἐβόλ ημεν-ἐφυ  
(P 131.6-44 115)

12. ἀνοι ἐβόλ (Ch. 20)  
(NB: ἀνοι is the imperative corresponding to the infinitive εἰ)

13. ἐν δι αἰρ (καὶ 31)  

14. ἐναγ γαρ ἵνογναλ ετμντεβίνη ἰται (A 11298)  
(NB: divide ε-τ-μντ-εβίνη)

15. ἀνοι ἢρψε ἵναπτος (P 130.4 100 ro)

16. εὐχαντονικ ἐρψη ἰν ἀπι-κοπ ἵνογνικτικ (IV 41)

17. ἀπι ἀ-πατοῦντι ἐρ-ἐφύνη ἦμαι (P 130.4 100 ro)  
(NB: πα− possessive pronoun)

18. ἀνοι ἦ-τικε-ειατ ἐβόλ (III 142)

19. Ὠγ πετο ἔναρσ σκ ἄξις ερόι (IV 38)  
(NB: Ὠγ πετο ἔναρσ “What is it that is an obstacle ...?” (“What hinders ...?"), Cleft Sentence with an interrogative focus (ὁγ “what?”), section 33; ἄξις see ἦω)

20. ματσαβόν πνοιεικ εψκαν ἰγω εκετ ἦν ἦπκογκα (IV 74)  
(NB: πν− = πεκ−, possessive article)

21. ἀπι-ἀναίν ἰπατο ἐβόλ ἦψωμε ἰπατοβον (IV 23)  
(NB: ἦψ- conjunctive continuing the imperative)

22. ἦ-τα-κας ἥ-ογ πε πεγλοβ ἤντεταντπη ἐτε-ἐντῳκ ἄν  
τε (Or. 155)  
(NB: ἤντα− definite relative present predicating ἤν−: “those that are in...”; ἐτε− relative converter with a negatedive delocative Nominal Sentence (section 3.2); ἐντῳκ possessive pronoun: “yours” (fem.))

23. εὐχαντεκακαες κε ματανον ἵγω εὑρανειβε ματσοφ  
(IV 127)

24. εὐχαντοου ἓν ὦτι ελεντ (Wess. 9 111)  
(NB: ὦτι pronominal state of ὅ with -τ the 1st sgl. suffix pronoun as object after a consonant (Table A 5a); ἕν 2nd sgl. fem. of the preposition ἦ-/να−)

25. ἕνωτι ἕτα τπαθενος ἦςοβ (A 1164)

(b) Negative:

1. ἢνακραν ἦνογρωμε ἦνερφνοβε (IV 41)

2. ἢνακριμε ἐτβεννυννυ ἦ ἕγατ (P 131.5 1 vo)
THE FORMAL-FUNCTIONAL SYSTEM

3. ἤπειραιθεὶ τὴνούγιγγῃς μαγατε (P 130.1 36 153)
   {NB: μαγατε 2nd sgl. fem. of the reinforcer μαγασα}

4. ετετειν τυγκαγως ἤπειρκα-πινακατε γινωτε ουδε
   ἤπειρταξρο εκω ἡμιν ἢμο (P 130.2 6 87)
   {NB: the addressee here is the 2nd person sgl. feminine (τυγκαγω-
   ρη). Note the special forms of the possessive article, prepositions,
   reinforcer and reflexive object of ταξρο (pronominal state of
   ταξρο and zero suffix "yourself")}

5. ἤπειρτ-ζοτε ἡτωτι (III 88)
   {NB: ἡτωτι: 2nd person plural of the reinforcer ἀνοκ, ἡτο, similar
   in form to the personal pronoun}

6. καν ἤπειρκαριθ ἤπειρκαρικε (RE 10 160)
   {NB: καν "at least"}

7. ἤπειρατ ἡμισρ ειεις σαοβενε ωαντιναγ εροκ πνογετε
   (III 146)
   {NB: ἡμ - pronominal state of ειρε ("make [as, into]"); -τ suffix
   pronom following a double vowel, the notation of a "disappeared"
   laryngal consonant (Table A 5a)}

8. ἤπειρττε-αααγ οε (Ch. 56)
   {OBS. ττε-...οε (pronominal ττο-...οε) "make <someone>
   suffer loss" is the causative lexemic equivalent of τ-οε "suffer
   loss"}

9. THE CAUSATIVE CONJUGATION (Table D)

   The causative conjugation consists of a set of forms conjugating the
   infinitive for person (in this sense, like the tense base conjugation) with a
   constant base -τε- which, in turn, is attached to prefixed forms of the
   verb "give", "let, cause", as follows:

   The prefixed infinitive of ἤτ: τ-τε-: τρεκωςτη the CAUSATIVE
   INFINITIVE "(to) make hear"; also supplying the infinitive with an
   actor: "for him to hear", "that he hear" (negatived τιτρεκωςτη)
   (9.1).

   The imperative of ἤτ: μα /negative ἤπειρτ (ἕπειρτ-): the CAUSATIVE
   IMPERATIVE OR JUSSIVE "make/let him hear!", "let him hear!
   μαρεκ-
   κωςτη / ἤπειρττρεκωςτη (10)

   A special grammaticalized first-person sgl. conjugated form of ἤτ:
   ταρεκωςτη the CONSEQUENTIA CAUSATIVE CONJUNCTIVE, ",(Do this,
   and (you may be sure that)..."."
NB: the 1st sgl. form of τρε- is τρα.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
POLOTSKY, "Modes"; *POLOTSKY, Kausativer Infinitiv

9.1 THE CAUSATIVE INFINITIVE (Table Dl): τρεψωτί / τρεψωμε σώτι

(1st sgl. τρασωτί, 2nd sgl. fem. τραπσωτί; also nominal/dem./ indef./interr. actor)

(a) In conjugation, occupying the usual infinitive position: "make/let him hear"

(b) After the preposition ε-: "that he hear"; neg. ετιμτρε-

(c) After other prepositions: γιντρε-, μηηνατρε-, αντιτρε-,

τιτρε-, πριτρε-, χωριτρε-, γιντρεςωτί "in (the event of) his hearing"

μηηνατρεςωτί "after (the event of) his hearing"

αντιτρεςωτί "instead of his hearing"

πριτρεςωτί "except that he hear"

πριτρεςωτί "without his hearing"

τιτρεςωτί "of his hearing"

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 461-463; STEINDORFF parr. 383-387, 452; TILL parr. 335-342, 351;
VERGOTE parr. 161(5), 204, 206-207; LAMBIDIN parr. 20.1, 30.4; *POLOTSKY,
Kausativer Infinitiv parr. 7, 10-21, 22-30

(a) In conjugation:

1. αγίτρεψωμε τηρού νηνυε μηπκασ (IV 36)
   [OBS. The two coordinated nouns stand in apposition to the 3rd plural pronoun in τρεγ-; nominal apposition to 3rd-person pronominal actor expressions in tense forms and τρε- after prepositions would be normally introduced by νεδι-]

2. αγίτρεψογωμε (III 90) [OBS. The object suffix alternant of ο after final ι]
   {NB: -σογωμε, r the object suffix alternant of o after final N}

3. τρεψωμε νηνοπε φινομε (A I 79)
   {NB: as 1st sgl. of the reinforcer (augens) 2ωω-}

4. αγρεψε-παι 2ωωρ παραβά (A I 118)

5. αγίτρεψρο-ρουσ ενεσκυνε μηπασάν (P 130.2 96 152)

6. μηψεστρεψ-ροσε φαπεσφογψ (Ch. 74)
7. κατ’ ἀτεργομεμένην ρουαναν ἦμι (III 16)
   (NB: κατ’ imperative with 1st person sgl. pron. object, see κω “let”; τα- 1st sgl. conjunctive, following-up the imperative and expressing its object action)
8. μητρέως σωμά γυν. μητρέσαλε μοοῦε (Wcss. 9 142)
9. αἵτρεγομου νὴπεκσώ ψι ἂπεκσώποι εἰσοῦν ενογεθρο ἔπεκε ἢ (Ch. 39)
10. αἵτρεσαυσάμοι μὴνεπὶθνειε τὴρον (Ch. 160)

(b) After the preposition ε-: ετρεψώτι, ετμτρεψώτι
1. ἡπογκαλεν ετρενειρε ἡπογς ψω ἢπογς ἢπογς ἦ (III 34)
2. αὐτόδου πε ετρεπσατάμας ἱρψώμε νῆθαλ εννοε ἐ (Ch. 76)
   (NB: ἤ... ἦ: “make... into”)
3. αὐγοττοὺ ἡν ετρεψφωπε ἠαρήν ἡγ. ἠχρα (IV 28)
   [OBS. The neutric feminine -ς (“it”) anticipates “that” (ἐτρεψίωπε); so too in texts 5, 10, 15, originally also 6]
4. αἵτμνογ δε σωμεν ετρεντψογν, απνίνθα (Lcyd. 295 = Rom. 13:11)
5. ἠμοτας τίνας ετρεσαύσαμοι ετρανθ. ἐννοε (III 191)
6. ἦσε ερόν ετρεπκαταφρονει ἢίποογ ρεβολ ἵτιηρψμε (III 35)
   (NB: ἦσε “it behaves”, “it is fitting” (originally present form with a neutric feminine actor: “it goes”)
7. αὐκτο ἐτέφρομ εἰπογον εὔἵττρεσκολάζε ἢμον ἤίεσθεν ἡπιράς ἀμο (IV 206)
8. ήκοκκεμ ἢνοι εἰς-γεμφομεν εὔἵττρεσμε δῆ- ψαχ εαχ καταλαλ νηθοτ (IV 172)
   (NB: ήκοκκεμ: present, 1st sgl. “I am (have been) reflecting”;
    εἰς- “for” (with duration of time), see section 14)
9. πκαρός πε ετρενεϊστ τη αγμασ ψωψε νεε ἄγμας-
    βαρος εἰσοῦν ενεγγυμεν γαρ νεγγυμερ (III 74)
10. ἡνογς δε ἂν ετρεόγα κρήν ἡπεβας (A II 258)
   (NB: ἡνογς “it is good”, Adjective Verb (section 22.1))
11. ητοκ γουίκ πεννίον τῆσιν ετοοτι εὔἵττρεσκατασε
    ἢπεκε (III 99f.)
   (NB: τῆσιν present form, “we enjoin”; γουί governs the preposition ετ- / ετοο-)
12. ἀμπησε ὁμα-μηταςεβος ἢν εὔἵττρεγφ-χοεις εροογ
    (IV 5)
FIRST PART

13. ἀναγ χε-ζ βαζ μαζ γίνεται ἀγαθον ετοιμα τι ἐτη-

τρεμύχον ἀλλάζ ημια (III 182)

14. τῳ ἂν ἡπάοεις ἡπεούς ἐς ετήτρεκσε ἡνογόρηρον ἦ-

νεκεῖ σε βραί ετοιμα τι μπλας ἡμιτακὴ ἔθε σιογάθαι ἡμα-

τραγ (III 106f.)

(NB: ημετα- determined relative perfect ("they who ...), predi-
cating τ- έθε ἦ- "be(comae) as")

15. ἡμετερωνες ετραίνως ἡμετο εβολ ηπάοεις (IV 91)

16. ἡμετερωνες ἡπώλει ἑτήτρεγθμο (IV 92)

(c) ἡμπτρεπεσπωθί, ἡμικτρεπεσπωθί; other prepositions with τρε-

τραγ as a "that" form:

(1) ἡμπτρεπσα ὁνί-πρν χαγεσωνι εσογην ὁνί-ὁπερπιον ...

ἡμπτρεπσαθη ὁνί-πρν ἡνταϊκαιοσιμι αναιμονιοσι σιω-

πας εσογη (IV 176f.)

2. ἀνα γας ἑσογονο ἡπα αγω ἡσομο ερον ἑσογονο ἡσομο

ἡμπτρεπσειν ἡτεβίς εσφαι εχων ἑσογεμερωβ ἑσογο-

ναχας (IV 206)

3. πειρωβ ἀναγ ερον ἡμπτρααςα ημπτεκος (III 38)

(NB: πειρωβος definite nominalized relative present (section

31.1.1): "the One who is exalted")

4. ἡμπτρεπτεσαρις απε ἑσογε-ἀκω ἑβολ ασρονο ασσίς

ἀσροις κατικεκιβε φχονο ἀλμασ ἁγη-πγρος (Ch. 148)

(NB: ἑσογε- inside the conjugation form, preceding and modifying

the infinitives: "rather")

[OBS. Note the use of the auxiliary τ- (construct of ειπε) with

nouns in the sense of "become"]

5. αἱεσβδομ ἠ-λογος ἑσογαθατ ηνοωτ εαπχοεις

δῆτα ἣνε esModule τὶ ἡμπτρεπκανοι αγω ἡμπτρεπκρινε

ημοι (Wess. 9 139)

(NB: δῆτα- ἦ- "find to be...")

6. ἀμανθητος σομολογει ἡπεξερ ἡμπτρεπκους ἡςγου

ἡςγου-κου ετάσε-οεις ηνοωτ ἑςογαθατ ἡμοιο

ἡμπτρεπκους ἡςητη τῆνπανιλος (Ch. 66)

7. ἡπεκηλαςα ἡμακατ ἡμικτρεπκασατε (III 148)

(NB: παρατι = παράτει (and often, τ = ει in words of Greek

origin: a phenomenon of Hellenistic Greek orthography and phono-

logy)

8. ἡμικτρεκε σαβο γετοοου ἡμικαλαςα ἡπεοου ε-

γωπε ἡμοο (III 88)
9. ἡνταγκάρασα ἰνκατεπερη-ἀνας ὑσ πε-ἰνενηρνοβε

aγειρε ον (III 17)

[OBS: εἰρε (with no or zero object) resumes the derived verb ἰ-ἀνας]

10. ἡνταγκτρέκκα-βολ ἱμοο γεήνακ ἂν ἰνκατεπερκομικογ

(Ch. 27)

[NB: γεήνακ ἂν “you not willing”, “against your will” (section 24.1)]

11. ὅγκαθηκηςις ὅιμ ὅγωρπ ὀτκηριακη ἰνκατεπεργος

ἡπεζαιλτρηςιον ἱπεναγαργιον ἵογογοο γογ α (III 111)

[NB: καθηκηςις = καθηκηςις, κηριακη = κηριακη (see note to text 7)]

12. Ἄμα ενταγηςκ εηαγ ἰνκατεπεργαςκ εβολ ἱνεγαγωγη

ἱπακοεις (III 126)

13. περοοο γε ἐντεγκαραγε (Ch. 178)

14. ἀνττεγκαγογηςκεις εβολ ἤγετογ λαδ-ατσοογυ ἱμορ

ϱωτογει ετοτηι ἱπεγτρυωβε (IV 4)

15. ἀνττεγκαγ-μοεις εξι-νταμιο ἰππογυτε ἤπεγκημελος

τρογυ ἰττη-εοοο γακ ακτεγαςζ ἰμοεις εχιπτακο

ἱπεγκοκοχος (Wess. 9 118)

[NB: the conjunctive (ἵρπη-εοοο) continues -τρεν-]

16. τεκβομ ἂγ τε εηες ογυτε ἰτδκ ογςε

νεκαδιμεν ετρε-ογραςε ἰρονε χωρις-τρεπεγογως χωρπ ἐπεγκεεγε

ἀγς τεγεπιμυλα γανο ἱπεγκεςικε (Ch. 35)

17. ειογεγ-ογ δττττττιευν ἰκατετρηκτης γομωτι (A I 267)

[NB: ειογεγογ “What is it that I want?”, Second Present with an interrogative object as focus (section 36)]

18. πμα ἂν ἐτρεπρωμε ογωνι οβολ ἐτρεμηττξωσι νε τιοτε

ἰτεμγαλο ἰτεμγαλα (A I 3)

[OBS. A negative copular Nominal Sentence (section 3.3), with (“the place to ...”, lit. “the place that one should ...”) as theme and τιοτε ... as rheme (predicate)]

19. ἑνογτρεπρωμε οονει γογο γοωνι (A I 52)

[NB: ἑνογ-: Adjective Verb: “It is better (that ...)”]

10 THE CAUSATIVE IMPERATIVE or JUSSIVE (Table D2):

3rd persons: ἡρεμςτι / ἡρεμπρωμε σωτι, neg. ἰπτρε-

ἐςτι / ἰπτρεπρωμε σωτι “Let him/the man (not) hear!”
1st person plural: ἀρακασμῶ, neg. ἀπατρεμεσμῶ! "Let us (not) hear!"
(Rarely also in the 1st singular, with the semantic component of causation more pronounced; also with nominal/dem./indefinite actor)

Bibliography:
Stern parr. 383, 398; Till parr. 346 (neg.); Lambdin parr. 30.1; Polotsky, "Modes" p. 81-84; *Kausativer Infinitiv* parr. 8, 31-36

(a) Affirmative:
1. ἀρακασμοοοῦ ἀπαρασμ (P 130.2 24 555)
2. ἀρακασμοοῦ τὸ σῶμα επετῶς ἀναλ (P. 130.2 100 ἀρο)
3. ἱκ τοῦ ὅν ἀγα μαρλογοοοο (Ch. 125)
4. ἀρακασμοοο ἅβε-ἀσσεπερε-ποοο ἀνουξ (Wess. 9 143)
5. ἐτεναὶ ἀρακασμοοοο οὐκ ἰμοο βοήει ἐροθ (RE 11 16)
6. ἵνασμοο ἀρακασμοο ἰκενερή (P 130.4 110 552)
   [OBS. ἰκον- + infinitive followed by a conjunctivum form predating the same verb is the Coptic version of the so-called "absolute" or "tautological" infinitive, used to reinforce the verbal notion ("he will hear indeed")]
7. ἀρακασμοοο ἰκενερή ὑσε ἱκ ... πα ἰτατίκ ἰκονοφρή ἰκεμπαμ ἐτενχτ ἀγα ὑσε ἰκαγαμο ἰκεμπα ἱκ ἀγα ὑσε ἰκατοκομο ἰκοθ (IV 34)
8. ἀσον ἱκοων ὅ νατην ἀρακασμοοοο ἀγα ἰττίκ ἵττμε ἱκακα επετοοοοο ἰκενερή (Wess. 130.5 550 22)
9. ἀρακασμοοοοο ἴκεκα ἱκοοοοο σῶμα ἰκοοοοο σῶμα ἰκοοοοοο ἰκεκακο ἱκοοοοο (Ch. 37)
10. ἀρακασμοο ἰτεναι ἱκοθ (A I 100)

(b) Negative:
1. ἀρακασμοοοοο ἰκοοοο (P 130.2 60 72) — ἱκὸ ἱκοοοο (A I 123)
2. ἀρακασμοοοοο ἱκακα-ἀτεττν-ἀτα ἱκατα ἱκατα ἱκατα ἱκατα (A I 173)
3. ἀρακασμοοοοο ἱκατοκο ἱκα τοκ παειτ (P 130.2 1 78)
4. ἀρακασμοοοοο ἱκατοκο ἱκατοκο (A I 123)
5. ἀρακασμοοοοο ἱκατοκο ἱκατοκο (Wess. 9 148)
6. ἀρακασμοοοοο ἰκενερή (P 131.6 44 115)
7. ἀρακασμοοοοο ἰτεκαρικ ἱκακα ἱκακα ἱκακα ἱκακα (IV 24)
   {NB: ἱκατοκο adversative particle}
8. ἀρακασμοοοοο ἱκατοκο ἱκατοκο ἱκατοκο ἱκατοκο (A I 166)
II THE CONSEQUENTIAL CAUSATIVE CONJUNCTIVE (ταρεψ- 
cwτη, Table D3):

2nd & 3rd persons: ταρεψcwτη / ταρεψcwτη / ταρεψcwτη 
cwτη "(Do this,) and (I promise you that . . .)". Also nominal/
demonstr./indefinite actor.
Ist person plural: ταρεψcwτη "... and then we shall . . ."
Also as the logical sequel to a rhetorical question.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern par. 453; Steindorff parr. 352-354; Till par. 311; Vergote par. 161(2);
Polotsky, "Modes" p. 87-89; * Kausativer Infinitiv parr. 9, 31, 37-40, 45

1. na tapynma nac wewntyka tarywewntyth yarpok k w ebol 
taryykw nak ebol (P 131.6 43 ro)
   (NB: wew- = wpy- (see wpywe))
2. nathep-empyte tarctebwbdom (III 112)
3. cei nhty nnetnyhamom nywy 2icwwe . . . tarpetycke 
oi nprwyk nwpwyw etemepwy (A II 224f.)
4. zapyz etemhellh ny e etchz tarpetynay encoeyntn 
   (Cl. Pr. 22 364)
5. wewntyka de zapkeiaco nocotyoy ebol . . . taryycfhe 
   eemne xe-nh-ebpyte nebalak (Ch. 48)
   (NB: cocoty = cocoty (see cwte); statement of non-
   existence, "there is not", section 12.2)
6. narpypocexne enepxwaxe tarpynme enetynwe nywq 
   (Cat. 41)
   (NB: netyynme nywq determined relative present "that which 
you seek", nywy - being the preposition governed by wpyne)
7. epywwo poywnyw tarpwywce pyt nywq (A II 510)
   (NB: epywwo Second Present, putting in focus the interrogative 
   adverbial predicate twm "where?" (section 37): "Where is he?")
8. amow etekkhrwia tarpywpyte cvoy epyk 2nteknmn-
   mawo (P 131.6 13 yo)
9. nyx-oyya ebol epywoy ynwywnhne tarpymtw twn bwyk 
   ebol nymaw (A I 63f.)
   (NB: epywoy adnominal circumstantial present: "that is evil")
UNIT (III): PRESENTATIVE and EXISTENTIAL CLAUSES
(sections 12-14)

12.1 Affirmation of existence: ὅγιν- "There exists"
12.1.1 Conversions

12.2 Negation of existence: (Ϻ)Μนำไป- "There does not exist"
12.2.1 Conversions

13.1 Affirmation of existential possession: the verboid ὅγιν τα - q "(He) has"
13.1.1 Conversions

13.2 Negation of existential possession: the verboid (Ϻ)Μนำไป - q "(He)
does not have"
13.2.1 Conversions

14 Presentative (deictic existence) clauses: εἴς (τῷ Χώτε) "Here is..."
Prepositional εἴς (with expression of time): "It has been ... since ...".

12 EXISTENTIAL STATEMENTS, EXISTENTIAL POSSESSION
(see Table E), ὅγιν- "there is/exists...", affirmation of existence (12.1)
(Ϻ)Μนำไป- "There is not/does not exist...") (12.2)

The existants (non-existants, as the case may be) are never definite;
however, the determinated ("definite") relative (31.1) does occur after ὅγιν-
or (Ϻ)Μนำไป-, in a generic (non-specific) sense (ὁγιν - πε - "there is
such a one as...")

The fusion of ὅγιν-/廛 (Mean) and the preposition Ντε -, Ντα - "with,
"by" forms the Coptic expression for predicative possession ("have/
have not"), i.e. the verboid ὅγιν τα -, (Ϻ)Μนำไป - (13)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 317, 368; Steindorff parr. 296, 397-402; Tilli parr. 287-296;
Vergote par. 170(7-8); Lambdin par. 2.2, Polotsky, "Conjugation System",
parr. 33-35; Shisha-Halevy, "Existential Statements"
12.1 AFFIRMATION OF EXISTENCE, ὠγὸ- “There exists”, “There is” (Table E1)

NB: ὠγὸ-... ἃ-/ὁμο- predicates intimate (“inalienable”) possession

1. ὠγῆκεκοσμή .createFrom(2) ἀρω ἑπὶ (Orig. 303)
2. ἡ ὠγῆς- ἔρω ἃς- ἔρημε ἐβολ ἁμοργη ἐτνη ... ἡ ὠγῆτεμήτ- ἐρω ἃς- ἔρω ἤπων ἡ ἀλ- ἐνεξ (A I 165)
   (NB: ἐτνη relative present: “that is coming”; ἔρημος is the
   abstract noun derived from the concrete ἔρω)
3. ὠγοῦον ἐρω ἤτοοτ ἤπχεοις ἡπν (P 130.5 15 ὅρ)
   [OBS. The preposition ὅ- denotes the debtor, ἤτοοτ- the creditor]
4. ὠγῆδων ἡμὸ εἰείμε ἄξε- τὰ ἤπατο γεῖτ- τη ἢ ἅ- πκας
   ἦ- ὁυ πτέωο (Orig. 814)
   (NB: ἡμο πτέωο preterite conversion of the Cleft Sentence
   (section 33.3): “What was it that existed?”)
5. ὠγῆδων ετρεψὐχ ἤποε ἄξε- σώμα ἃ- ὁς ἁ ἁγ- ᾿ψὐχ ᾿ψὐχ (Orig. 335)
   (NB: ἃ- = ἃ; a rhetorical question)
6. ὠγῆδιμων εὐπν ἃς ἄσιμων ἄγω ἔρμε ἡπομηρος
   εὐπν ἄραρμε ἡπομηρος (A I 16)
   (NB: εὐπντ adnominal circumstantial present, qualifying the zero-
   article nouns: "running after", "pursuing")
7. ἐψε- ὠγῆχε ἤσωντυ ἐκι ἡμοο ἡδὸν ἁρογα-
   τας ἃς- εἰείμε (III 139)
   (NB: ἐκι ἡμοο ἡδὸν ἁρογα adnominal circumstantial present, qualifi-
   cying "whom I am wronging")
8. ὠγῆχεος ἐψαρψεσχ᾽ ἵππωτες ἐρος ἃς- ὠγοῖς ἐκ
   (Or. 159)
9. ἤτωτ ἃ ὠγῆς ὠγῆδων ὠγοῖοον ὠγῆς ὠγῆς ὠγῆς-
   παρχῶντα ὠγῆγῃ ἐκ ἁπαγῃ ἂγω ὠγῆδων ἤμωτ
   ἐρ- πογὶ ἡποτ ἄπόγεσχαι ἢματ (Ch. 100)
   [OBS. Note the conjunction-less coordination of several clauses in
   an “enumerative style”]

12.1.1 ὠγὸ- CONVERTED (Tables E1, G):

(a) Circumstantial ὠγὸ- ἐγὸ- “there existing ...” (also adnominal; 27-30)
(b) Relative ἐτεογὸ- “(...) whom there exists ...” (31-33)
(c) Second Tense ὠγὸ- (very rare; 34-38)
(d) Preterite ἓογιν- "there existed", also in hypothetical (remote) condition (39-41)

**BIBLIOGRAPHY:**

Stern parr. 412, 414; Steindorff parr. 374, 377, 468; Till parr. 462, 468; Lambdin par. 25.1(c); Polotsky, "Conjugation System", parr. 33-35, *Nom. Transposition* parr. 34-37

(a) Circumstantial:

1. ἵνκερωβ γαρ ἄγω κεφαλε εὐγνωμ ετρέψων εὐτή εὐροο ... (Orig. 360)
   (NB: ἵνν-: see section 12.2)
2. ἵππ-ἐβχ-θυτὴ ἐνετυώνει ἰκνήτηνθμ ἰκάλλα ἰςῳβ εὐγνωμ ἰτντὴ εἰςαμ ϊαν (E 81)
   (NB: ἐνετυώνει determined relative present "they that are ill")

(b) Relative:

1. ἐνετίννομτε ἐτεοῦι-βαλ ἰμοογ (Mun. 107)
2. πετεοὐγνωμ ἰμον ἐςῳβ νίν (E 88)

(c) Second Tense:

1. ἄρα εὐγκεντὴ ἱπνοοντε πιαντοκρατῷ (Ch. 186)
   (NB: the Second Tense marks the rhetorical question as such, or stresses the existant γεντὴ, or both (see sections 36, 38))

(d) Preterite:

1. ἐνευγνωμ γαρ ἰμοκ ἄγω ενε-τονθεία ἀν τε ἱπεξὶ (you would not have remained silent) (Ch. 36)
2. ἐνευγνωσόν γαρ ἰμηνὑε ἰκαγ νε (Ch. 133)
   (NB: νε occurs often with the preterite conversion: its function is not entirely clear, but it seems to mark the whole clause as background)

12.2 NEGATION OF EXISTENCE: ἵνν-, ἕν- "There does not exist", "There is not" (Table E1)

NB: (ἵ)ἵν-... ἑ-/ἵμον- negates intimate ("inalienable") possession

1. ἵςομοφος ἵςογο εὐροο (IV 2)
   (NB: the preposition ε- used to express comparison ("more than"))
2. ἰκάλλα γαρ ἰκωντὶ χύρικ-τεποχοῖα ἱπνοοτε (IV 199)
3. ἤμησασθος ἤπωλ ἄστεραγραφ ἦ- ἦπτει εἰρπαλ εἰς ἔωσι (IV 10)
   [OBS. ἦ- introduces a relative (rather adnominal) negative clause
    qualifying the existant of ἤμη- (or in implied non-existence)]
4. ἤμηκεκεσθαι γαρ ἄγνωστοι ὑπάκουε σώματι
   ἐποδοῦ ἐνοεῖ ἤμοος ἐν ἐτ' ἀρκος ἤπνησαν (Orig. 360)
5. ἤμησασθεὶ SPEC ἤπνησα ἤροι (III 133)
6. ἤεβάλα ὑπάκουε ἄνεαστης ἐμονοη ἐνεπὶ ἐπετρεπθαὶ ἐπέ- ὑγν
   ἐποδοῦ ἤπτει ἐμεαστη ἐτεφτεραὶ (Or. 157)
7. ἤπατ ἄγα ἠνακλοὺν ἦπα ὑπάγει ἤμνοος ἤμονοι ἤπε
   ἠμάγκας (Ch. 96)
8. ἤμησασθεὶ ἤμητκας ἤμηπείρασθε ἤρομε ἤμηδοκι-
   ἤμονε ἤμοκ (Ch. 13)
9. ὅγκογι ἐν ἄγν ἤμηκεβ ἤμοος (Ch. 148)
10. ἤρομε ἄρω- ψυχο ἅγν ἤμηψυχο ἅρω- ἤρομε (Orig. 340)
11. ἤτοκ πο ἤτοκ πο ἄγν ἤκημονοτε ἦταλακ (A 1 211)
    [OBS. ἤτοκ πο ἤτοκ πο Nominal Sentence predicating immu-
     nability or Divine Existence]

12.2.1 (ὕ)μη- CONVERTED (Tables E1, G):

(a) Circumstantial ὅμη-, ἐμη-, ἤμη- “there not existing…” (also
    adnominal; 27-30)
(b) Relative ἐτε(ὕ)μη “(…) whom there does not exist…” (31-33)
(c) Second Tense ἐ(ὕ)μη- Scripture coptic ἐτε(ὕ)μη- (rare; 34-38)
(d) Preterite ἐ(ὥ)μη- “there used not to exist”, also in hypothetical
    (remote) condition (39-41)

(a) Circumstantial:

1. (They say there are twelve gospels,) ἤμηογον ἦςα- ἐποοὐ πκα-
   ταθράκτος πνευματοσ ταθράκτος πκαταθράκτος
   ἤκατος (Orig. 425)
2. ἢωξε ἤμητακρο ἦςητ (A II 416)
3. πενταθρέωμε ἢωπε ἤμηογον (Ch. 149)
   {NB: πενταθρέ- determined relative perfect: “He who caus-
    ed…”}

(b) Relative:

1. πκαταρος ἤτηκω ἤπωλ ἦςητ (A I 212)
2. ἤτεκατ θμοου (III 143)
3. ἧττος ὁμον λαβεὶ ἄνεργοις ἐπιγραφή ἥ- ἡπειρὶ εἰμι ἐκεῖο (IV 10)
   [OBS. Adnominal ἥ-, see OBS. on 12.2, text (3)]

(c) Second Tense:

1. μνημιτρήργαν-ποοογν τῇ τῇ ἀγῳ ἐμμέκενοντε ἕδα-ίς
   (K 9316)
   {NB: this is probably the Second Tense as a “that” clause}
2. (NOT SHENOUTE) ἡ ἑτεμῦνδιον ἢμοί ἑτοῦξε-θυτῖ (Jes. 50:2)
   {NB: the Second Tense marking a rhetorical question}

(d) Preterite:

1. ἥμ-πετκωτε ἑνωγ ψε (A I 459)
   {NB: πετ- “one who…”, det. relative present}

13 THE EXISTENTIAL-POSSESSION VERBOLD (Table E2):
Affirmative ὁγῦτα-: “(He) has…” (“There is + with him”)
Negative (힣)ḥῦτα- “(He) does not have…” (“There is not + with
him”)

The possession verbold is combined with the POSSESSOR (nominal/pronon- 

nominal) and POSSESSED (nominal/prononominal) in the following main 
constructions:

NOMINAL POSSESSED

(a) ὁγῦτα- (PRON. POSSESSOR)/ὁγῦτε- (NOM. POSSESSOR) + POSSESSED
    (+ ἡμαί “there”)
(b) ὁγῦτα- (PRON. POSSESSOR)/ὁγῦτε- (NOM. POSSESSOR) (+ ἡμαί)
    + ἴ- POSSESSED

PRONOMINAL POSSESSED

(c) ὁγῦτα- + POSSESSOR + POSSESSED (possessor: suffix pronouns; 
possessed: objective pronouns, see Table A5a/a1)

Construction (a) is normal for a zero-determined possessed and possible 
with other determinators; all constructions are used for ὁγῦτα- and (힣)ḥῦτα-.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 312-316; Steindorff parr. 397-403; Till parr. 289-295; Vergote 
parr. 170(8); Lammad par. 22.1; Polotsky, “Conjugation-System” parr. 33-35;
*Nom. Transposition parr. 41-46
13.1 AFFIRMATION OFEXISTENTIAL POSSESSION: οὐντα-“(He) has” (Table E2)

1. οὐντα-22 ἤξρηκα ἡμᾶι (IV 25)
2. οὐνταγ ἡμᾶι ὄγισον ἤβεκε γατι-πνοῦτε (P 130.2 102 22)
3. οὐντα-τι ἡμᾶι (Ch. 120)
4. οὐντε-πεξούσι ἐκ ἑτ useCallback (IV 13)
5. προ οὐντε-πεξιἀτογ πελί (Ch. 28)
6. Ῥ οὐντε-πεξείσφι δροσι ἰαν ὅ τοι ἀναγεννοῦε (Ch. 42)
7. ταφύκε οὐντε-22 ἐκαθον ἡμᾶι (1111 = Lc. 12:19)
    {NB: second sgl. fem. possessor}

13.1.1 οὐντα- CONVERTED (Tables E2, G):

(a) Circumstantial εοὐντα- εοὐντα- “(he) having...” (also adnominal; 27-30)
(b) Relative ετεοὐντα- “who has...”, “whom (he) has...” (31-33)
(c) Second Tense ε(ο)γυντα- “(It is ...) that (he) has...” (34-38)
    Negated εοὐντα-... an “(He) had, used to have...”, also in
    hypothetical (remote) condition (39-41)

NB: resumption of the antecedent (in the case of relative conversion:
    “...which (he) has...”) is by means of the objective pronouns (Table A5a1)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 412, 414; STEINDORFF parr. 402, 468; LAMBDOIN parr. 25.1(c); POLUTSKY,
"Conjugation System" parr. 33-35; * Nom. Transposition parr. 47-50

(a) Circumstantial:
1. ηάους εοὐνταν ερθεμε ηάουο εοὐνταγ ερον (Miss. 278)
   {NB: ηάους Adjective Verb (section 22.1) with a neutric feminine
     actor “it is good”}
2. ζενρβμε εοὐνταν εροογ (P 130.4 157 ro)
3. οπργκεε εοὐντα-22 ἀναγεν (A II 61)
   [OBS. άναγε + circumstantial is here used to supply a (negative)
    imperative for the possessive verb]

(b) Relative:
1. ογον ηπ ηετεοὐνταγ ἡμαγ ἡτείζελαπ (Ch. 86)
2. εοτεοὐνταγ-ρθμε ἡμαγ (P 130.2 62 76)
3. πετεοῦτας _MetaData_bus $_MetaData_marquei epíakasthrión (III 89)
4. τεγαρανή ετεοῦτας εξουν ἐπνούτε (IV 52)
5. πετεοῦτας (Or. 161)
   (NB: -cow is here the objective pronoun (Table A, a); similarly -c in the next text)
6. οὐγι[τ-]ωζε οὐγιστετεοῦται (Ch. 99)
   (NB: this is a Clefs Sentence (section 33), with the possessed put in focus and resumed by the objective pronoun -c: "It is a... that I have")
7. πετεοῦται ἡμας ἡπεούσια εἰπμαν αγω ὁ εοῦταγ
   ετ ἦπηκε (Ch. 86)
   (NB: The relative conversion is here carried on by the circumstantial (section 29.1))

(c) Second Tense:
1. εὐχε-οὐγιτακ-πιτικ ἡμας εἰε εοῦτακ ἡμας ἰππωκ
   ἤπμυστηριόν (Cat. 43)
   (NB: the direct object is emphasized (put into focus) by the Second Tense)
2. εὐχε-οὐγιτι-ογιομ γαρ ὁ εοῦταγε ἢνετκα-μα ναγ
   ἦπητου (III 85)
   (NB: ἢν- is here put into focus by the Second Tense)

(d) Preterite:
1. παειωτ ᾶ-εοογ ναι ἢπεοογ εεουγτακτακ ἵτακεκ ἐνπα-
   τεποκομος ψωπε (Cat. 42 = Joh. 17:5)
   (NB: ᾶ-εοογ imperative; εεογτακ- relative preterite (double conversion))
2. εεεογτακτακ-ζελπικ γαρ ἡμας ἦετκαναγωγών ἰπποεικ
   ἤγναβωκ ἀν η εβολ ἦτοτήν (Wess. 9 162)
   (NB: εε- circumstantial preterite (double conversion), expressing the supposition constituent of a remote hypothetical condition ("irrealis"); ἤγνα- preterite future, used for remote hypothetical result ("they would not have gone", see section 41))

13.2 NEGATION OF EXISTENTIAL POSSESSION: THE VERBOD (_MetaData-) "(He) does not have..." (Table E2)
For construction and Bibliography, see 13.1
1. εὐχε-_MetaData-πιτικ ἡμας εἰε-_MetaData-ζελπικ ἡμας
   (Cat. 43)
2. μητήδον ἡμας παρακολούθων ἡσαύρω (III 78)
   (NB: παρακολούθων address ("vocative"))
3. μήτα-λοιβέ μήτα-ψαχφ εκχ 2μπεζοου ἡμας (Ch. 120)
4. μήταγ ἡμας ἠτότε ἡπεκ (P 130.2 25 327)
5. εὖχεοῦντακρεισκεὶ ἑνογογοεῖς ἄλλα τενόυ μήτακ
   (Ch. 31)
6. μήτε-πεἰσσυνέ ψη ἡμας (IV 21)
7. μήτε-δικαστήριον ψαχφ ἡμας εκχ εροι (Ch. 95)
8. ἄριον ἀντίρα μήταν-βεζείνις ἡμας ἐκανένεργος εἰ-
   μήτε ἐννυντει ἐγαταφ ἡπὶκοεις ἔκ (III 136)
9. μήται-μοστε εγούν εροι (A I 71)
10. μήταν-οείκ εἰούσι (Ch. 47)

13.2.1 (η)μήτα- CONVERTED (Tables E2, G)
(a) Circumstantial εμήτα-, εμήτα-, μήτα- "(He) not
   having..." (also adnominal; 27-30)
(b) Relative ετε(μ)μήτα- "who does not have", "whom (he) does
   not have" (31-33)
(d) Preterite νεμήτα- "(He) did not have...", also in hypothetical
   (remote) condition (34-38)

For Bibliography, see 13.2.1
(a) Circumstantial:
1. γενέτουρε ἰνοτε εμήτου-ηνε (E 94)
2. εμήτετσανάγασθαν ἰνιογαϊαν παοεις ἔκ ἡμας ἰμήτου-
   λαλαγ ἡμας (III 57)
3. γενεύμνο εμήτου-ρωνε ἡμας 2ρα1 ἗νητς (P 130.2 62 76)
(b) Relative:
1. πνοιτε ετεμήτα-ψιονος (P 130.2 101 ρο)
2. νεσιοχρε ετεμήτου-ψιρε ἡμας ἵτετσαφ (IV 31)
3. πετεμήτασ-ψιρε μήτασ-πειωτ εμήτασ-πειωτ ἄτε μή-
   τασ-ποντε ἡμας (A II 384)
   {NB: πετεμήτασ- determinated relative: "he who..."; so too in
   text 4}
4. πετεουγύτη-ζοειτε εὐτε χαπετ-ογει ιπετεμήτασ αγω
   πετεουγύτη-ογοεικ χαπετερει οξ ταί (Ch. 55, cf. Lc.
   3:11)
(c) **Preterite:**

1. *νεμῆταχε* (III 78)

14 **PRESENTATIVE (DEICTIC-EXISTENTIAL) CLAUSES:** *εἰς-, εἰς-ζήντε* “Here is…”

(a) # *εἰς- + noun syntagma (+ adverb/circumstantial/relative) #,
    # *εἰς-ζήντε* (rarely *εἰς-*) + clause #
(b) # *εἰς- + expression of time: “prepositional” *εἰς*, “for” (with the present tense in the 1st person in Coptic, corresponding to the Present Perfect Progressive in English, “have been…-ing”)

**BIBLIOGRAPHY:**

Stern par. 529; Steinhorst par. 214-215; Till par. 387; Vergote par. 182; Lambdin par. 28.2; Shisha-Halevy, “Existential Statements”

(a)

1. *εἰς-οὖρμᾶλο* ἰπνοός ᾠνυπόλειο… (IV 25)
2. *εἰς-οὖμνῆταξαε* εἴποντες ἰσεῖς θείος θεῖος ἰπνοός ἰς-ἀνον-ναπεξ (III 74)
   {NB: εἴγαξοι ἰπνοός adnominal circumstantial qualifying ἱς-:
   “Who say”}
3. εἴποντες οὔτασι ἰπναγκαAAAαίκα εἰς-πογομὴ ε-
   τογααε ἱππαμαεε οτιανι ανακαεεκ εἰς-Η (III 94)
   {NB: ετογααε, ετανι relative present forms (qualifying
   πογομη and πταφος) predicable the statives ὅμαα, “which is
   holy”, οταν “which is precious”)
4. *εἰς-ζήντε* δε ἀτέπαλατ ἰπκουογ ὕγωνδ ἐβολ (Orig. 413)
5. *πνὼλ* ἰπναγκααος ἱξαγαααι *εἰς-ζήντε* ἰς-θυογ τὴσαρεηε
   ἐφοογ γάτην (III 89)
   {NB: although *εἰς-ζήντε* seems to have been generalized for all
   genders/numbers, ζήντε replaces ζήντε here with a 3rd plural
   presented pronoun}
6. *εἰς-παε* πε πνυ (III 166)
7. *εἰςογρως* αρε (A I 54)
8. *εἰςπαγωζη* ἰδονε βι εἰς πκωζη οντεγεμ ἱγ ἱκολ-
   ας εἰς-ζησες (Ch. 171)

(b)

1. *δοκμεν* ἰπνο ο εἰς-ζήντε (IV.172) …
(NB: ἔχω/ἐχω ἐκκατέρτη present form (section 15.1) "I have been considering, pondering")

2. εἰκ-γω ἐκκατέρτη ἔχω ἓν περὶ ἴραμα (P 130.5 79.1)
   (NB: ἔχω present "I have been reading"

3. εἰκ-γω ἐκκατέρτη ἔχω ἔσχον εἰς ψυχή (Ch. 173)
   (NB: ἔσχον present, predicating a stative (section 16.1): "I have been going"; εἰς ψυχή circumstantial present (section 15.1.1) "I searching")
UNIT (IV): THE DURATIVE ("BIPARTITE") CONJUGATION
(sections 15-18)

15.1 The present: durative infinitive rheme: personal pronoun, Proper Name, demonstrative or definite nominal theme-actor
15.1.1 Conversions

15.2 The existential present: durative infinitive rheme, an indefinite nominal (indef. or zero-determinated) or pronominal theme-actor
15.2.1 Conversions

16.1 The present: stative verbal rheme, personal pronoun, Proper Name, demonstrative or definite nominal theme-actor
16.1.1 Conversions

16.2 The existential present: stative verbal predicate, an indefinite nominal (indef. or zero-determinated) or pronominal theme-actor
16.2.1 Conversions

17.1 The present-based future: personal pronoun, Proper Name, demonstrative or definite nominal theme-actor
17.1.1 Conversions

17.2 The existential present-based future, an indefinite nominal (indef. or zero-determinated) or pronominal actor
17.2.1 Conversions

(*) 18. Assorted durative examples: stative vs. infinitive. The stern-jernstedt rule (direct object of the durative infinitive).

15-19 THE DURATIVE ("BIPARTITE") CONJUGATION (Table F)

This present-tense conjugation pattern combines a Proper Name, definite noun, demonstrative or personal pronoun (prefix-pronoun, Table A 5b) as theme (subject) and actor, with a situational verbal rheme (predicate): the durative infinitive (15), e.g. "in the action or course of hearing" (cf. English "writing" as in "He is writing"); or with the stative (16), a special form expressing (for transitive verbs) passive state (cf. "broken", "written" as in "It is written"). For intransitives
(e.g. verbs denoting movement, posture, condition or quality), the statics conveys the condition of being in action or state ("I am coming", "The boy is thirsty") and replaces the durative infinitive as the normal rheme in the durative conjugation. A certain statics (ήν, "being in the course of going") is used as auxiliary with the lexical infinitive, forming a compound future (17). An adjective is a third word-class predicated in the durative conjugation (19): "I am here", "God is in this house". Like another major non-verbal clause pattern, namely the Nominal Sentence, the durative conjugation is negated by (ή-). . . . . an, enveloping the negated clause.

In the case of indefinite actor nouns and pronouns, the durative conjugation is combined with the existential (affirmative) οὐ̂ν- or (negative), (ή)μή- constituting existential durative predications.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN, parr. 366, 371, STEINDORFF parr. 311-312, 316-317, 418; TILL. parr. 251-252, VERGOTE parr. 158; LAMBIDIN parr. 24.2; POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System" parr. 5-9, 19-24, 28-29

15.1 THE PRESENT: DURATIVE INFINITIVE RHEME, personal pronoun, proper name, demonstrative or definite nominal theme-actor (Table F1)

Negation: η̄- ... an or ... an

NB (the so-called STERN-JERNSTEIN RULE):
The definite, indefinite or pronominal direct object of the durative infinitive is normally introduced by the preposition η̄- μή- and not attached directly to prenominal (construct) or pronominal forms of the infinitive (τοίμε η̄- πνοτε "I love God" Τοίμε μή- q "I love him"). The verb "want, desire" is a unique exception ("I want them", τογαν- ογ). On the other hand, zero-article objects are as a rule attached to the prenominal form: qογεμ- αq "He eats meat".

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 490, 492, 494; STEINDORFF parr. 311-312, 316-317, 392; TILL parr. 2, 258-261; VERGOTE parr. 118(1), 186; LAMBIDIN parr. 18.1, 24.2, 26.1; POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System" parr. 5-9, 19-24; YOUNG, "Present I"; *SHISHA-HALEVY, Chapter 3

1. Τοιμε γαρ βε- τετογεμ- μοος (Ch. 125)
[OBS. -ογεμμοος the direct object (of ογομ) is here the infinitive μοος]
2. οσσούν γὰρ θε-ἀγαθον ἃμ ὄνομα ὑπὲρ ἐλατρεύει (III 72)
   [OBS. Note the plural treatment of the noun syntagm with ἃμ]
3. σεργεύσα σεούματι σεσω (IV 22)
   [OBS. Note the asyndetic (conjunction-less) coordination, common
   in cases of enumeration]  
4. κτωριν ἣσαεινούγοι ἄν ἄν (Ch. 41)
5. τεσσε ὑσε ἁμ ὄνομα ἄγῳ τεσοῦμ (III 202)
   [OBS. Note the zero-determined object, which enters the immediate
direct-object construction in the present]
6. ὁμοιόμονοι θεσμοί ὑοί ὁμ ὁμοιόμονοι θεοτήντος ὅτο τοῦ ὅρκου ἔσερκο ἐρώτηται ἔσερκον ἐσοφνός οἱ (Wess. 9 103)
   (NB: ὅτο τοῦ ὅρκου nominalized relative (περιτ-, section 31.1.1)
   with the indefinite article: “(thing)s that are evil”)
7. οὐσίσεος πενήντας ἔροτε ἄγῳ πενήντας ὅμοι οὐσίσεος ὅμοι ἔσερκον (IV 1)
8. τὸν θεόν ἴσην ἐν ἐπιστήμῃ ἐτούλαθον ἔσερκον στήνοτε αἰγῷ ἰσωτε ἴσωτα ἐν ἐπιστήμῃ ἐς ἔσερκον ἐκείνου (III 218)
   (NB: ἐτούλαθον relative present predicating the stative; “which is
crystal"
9. τεττε ἵστη ἐπεντάκοι ξοοῦ (A I 120)
10. ἢτοι ὤμη ἐρωτοῦν (Ch. 39)
11. τεσσοῦν ἢττ-ώσι ἐπούλαθον ἢτο εἰστηκεῖθεν ... τενομή ἡμῶν ἀει ομοιόμονοι ἐς ἐπεντάκοι (III 202)
12. ἵσωμεν ἐκείνῳ ἐξ-ντείπερθε ἴμος αν (Ch. 116)
13. τεσσε ἐρωτοῦν ἄγῳ ομοιοῦν ἄν ἴμοος (Z 186 257)
14. ἴμοα-ναι ἴτοπολαὶ ἔποικε ἐντομε ἐξ ἐπιστήμῃ ἴτο ἴτα ὑπολογίζοντε (P 130.4 8 92)
15. ἵτσοο χοικόκοι ἃς ἐξ ἄγῃ-θείνα (P 130.4 88 ἄο)
16. ἐττεοῦ ἵτοργοτε ἀν (IV 21)
17. ἁνοι τεσσοῦν ἃς ἴλαξ (Ch. 68)
18. ἤμωρε ἴσως ἃς ἐξ ἄγῃ-πειστ (A I 519)
19. ἵσωμεν ἴβαλ ἔτοιτε ἰκτήνῃ ἵτα ἴσω ἴτα ἴτα ὑποτσόοι ἵτο ἱματον ἴε χεῖ ἴν ἰβάλ ἴττο ἱματον ἴε ἰκτήστατ (Ch. 96)
   (NB: ἰκτήστατ, ἴν ἰκτήστατ: determinated relative forms (pre-
   sent and Adjective Verb respectively): “those that are evil”, “those
   that are good”)
20. ἔγραψε ἀν ἑυλαρ ἐπεξεχεῖ τρίτον ἔγραψε ἑυλαρ (Wess. 9 143)
   (NB: ἤ... ἀν negatives ἔγραψε, originally ἔγραψε: “it is (not) fitting, right”)
21. ἔγραψε ἀν ἔχειν ὑνομία ἄν ἐγράφει ἔγραφον (III 192)
   (NB: rhetorical question: “Don’t you...?”)
22. ζησὺ γὰρ ἤνοικ ἡπειγάτερον ἡκατομβικούς ἐκ-χι
     ἤγενθαι εἰπαί ἤγενθαι ἐνεχώρα ἐσ-μαν ἂγογας
     ἐνεχώρα (III 58)
23. πλόγος ἄγω τὸν ἀγών (III 193)
24. πυθάζει μοι ἢν ἐνεοι ἢνοι (III 197)

15.1. THE DURATIVE INFINITIVE PREDICATION CONVERTED
(see Tables F1, G):

(a) Circumstantial ε-: εὐκωτῆ / ἐπερπώμε σῶτη
   Negatived ε(ν)ευκωτῆ ἀν / ἐπερπώμε σῶτη ἀν, ἐπερπώμε
   σῶτη ἀν
   “He/the man (not) hearing” (also adnominal: 27-30)
(b) Relative ετ- ετε-: ετεκωτῆ (ετ(ν)εκωτῆ ...) / ετεβερπώμε
   σῶτη ...
   Negatived ετκωτῆ ἀν (ετεκωτῆ ἀν ...) / ετεβερπώμε
   σῶτη ἀν ..., ετεβερπώμε σῶτη ἀν...
   “who is (not) hearing” “whom (he/you/the man) is/are (not)
   hearing” (31-33)
(c) Second Tense (Second Present) ε-: εὐκωτῆ / ἐπερπώμε
   σῶτη
   Negatived (ν)ευκωτῆ ... ἀν / (ν)ἐπερπώμε σῶτη ... ἀν
   “(It is) (not) ... that he/the man is hearing” (34-38)
(d) Preterite κε-: κενκωτῆ (... κε) / κενἐπερπώμε σῶτη (... κε)
   Negatived κενκωτῆ ἀν (... κε) / κενἐπερπώμε σῶτη ἀν
   (... κε)
   “He/the man was (not) hearing”; also in hypothetical (remote)
   condition (39-41)

NB: (1) Following the converters, the pronominal themes are not prefix-
pronouns as in the basic (unconverted) present, but suffix pronouns
(Table A5b)
(2) With the 2nd sgl. fem. pronoun (i.e. zero), the converters have
the same form as with a nominal theme: ερε, ετερε-, ερε-, κερε- or
(for the relative) a special form ετε-.
(3) Relative, 1st sgl ἐτ. = ἐτ. (not *ἐτ. + ἐτ.-): see (1).

(4) Note the two forms of the negatived relative (according to the
negativer: ἂ... ἄν or ἂ... ἄν): ἐτεπείσεως ἄν ἐτεσώς ἄν /
ἐτεπείσεως ἄν ἐτεσώς ἄν. Similarly
(circumstantial, prenominal): ἐμπρος ἄν ἐμπρος ἄν. ἐμπρος ἄν.

(5) Note the difference between the circumstantial negatived present:
ἐ-ν-κ-σωτή ἄν / ἐ-κ-πρωμε σωτή ἄ

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 373, 391, 416-417, 428-429; Steindorff parr. 329, 376, 459-460,
462, 466; Till parr. 317, 329, 465-466, 470-471, 473; Vercote parr. 163(1),
164(1), 165(1), 166(1,3,4), 167(1,2,4); Polotsky, "Conjugation System" parr.
10-18, *Nom. Transposition parr. 11, 13-14; *Funk, "Qualitativ"

(a) Circumstantial:
1. ἄντερσεως ἕτος ἐτικ εἰρην ἂναι (Ch. 102)
   {NB: ἕτος particle, not personal pronoun or augens}
2. ἐσωτή εἰσθιε εἰς ἄγνως ἃναι ἕνας εἰς ἑνόμοιε εὐρίμε
   (Ch. 201)
3. σεκβει ἐνωι κακίναριον ἐνόμοιε ἄν (RE 10 164)
4. χαγῳστὶ εἰσθιε εἰς ἄγνως ἕφεκιοι εἰρην ἃνω (Ch. 90)
5. ἁναγκαστι εἰρηνίν ἐκεν ἄγνως ἐκεν ἁνοικ χαγῳστὶ
   ἕξιοι ἐκενοι (IV 125)
   {NB: εὑ- = ε-οὐ-, not circumstantial converter but prepositional
   phrase)
6. ἀγῳστε ἂναι ἐς ἐκενι εἰς ἐκεν (III 39)
7. ἄντερος ἐπικε εἰς ἂν ἂν (Ch. 103)
8. καὶ ἐγκοτε ἐποτοι ζερὸ ἁπαντε χαγῳστοι επα-
   τοι (IV 25)
9. ἀγωνελετ οφούσε επικα ἂναι (III 203)
   {NB: 2nd sgl. fem. actor}
10. σεπειοε ἂναι εὐς εἰς ἐκενιοαι ἁναι ἁΓω
    ἐκενοι ἐκεν ἁνοικ ἃν χως-ϊννο εἰς ἐκεν (III 135)
11. ὁγιτε-τες τες οικοὶ ἐκεν η ἄτικοι ἐγκελεε ἃν
   (IV 13)
12. πεσπο ἃνοιξε ἄτικας ἀντε ἐς ἐς ἀρκο
   ζε... (III 65)
THE FORMAL-FUNCTIONAL SYSTEM

13. Ἥθε ετεκανήναυ ερόου ζήνενβαλ εγξμοος 2αζην εγνε
tακοει ερενευρήειοογε ώγο επενή (III 149)
{NB: ρήειοογε plural of ρήειν}

(b) Relative:
1. πζως ετὴσως ερόου ζήπανι (IV 163)
2. πμα ετογβωστ εβολ 2ντη (III 115)
3. νεζμηυε.νισωε ετεειρε νημοογ ζηνκακε (III 200)
   {NB: ετε- a variant form of ετερε- with the 2nd sgl. fem. zero
   pronoun}
4. νετεηεςωμιςε αν ζηεκενενοηυε (Ch. 109)
5. ἵρωμε ετειετερωπας αν ετημετερο 2νηπνυε εερεωας ηνι-
   κωςτι ντεζεηεμα (Ch. 113)
6. νετογεως ρηνηε 2νηετογεηως-ημερε αν (Ch. 67)
7. πρωμε ετη εμιες ... τηιιε ετηδωισε εβολ 2ντη (III 65)
8. νεκκεμηηαθεπως εηηξτξηα αν ηδοογ ογο νηα (Ch. 34)
9. πογωμ εποηηρον ετεεξεδαληου με ηδοο (Ch. 74)
10. σογη-νετεεπεξε πακε ηνητου αγω εγξακε ζηνεξε
    2νηετωκακε εβολ 2νηπαληαβολος αγω ερεπαλαβολος
    πακε εβολ ηνητου (Wess. 9 142)
   {NB: the circumstantial “carries on” the relative conversion}
11. ηνπακε τηρογ ετεκωτι εροογ (A I 157)
   {NB: ετε-: relative converter with a 2nd sgl. fem. actor pronoun}

(c) Second Present:
1. εγξεκωστ ηδοογ ρηδαληοοιον (A I 380)
   {NB: the preposition ρ- (“to”) put in focus by the Second Present:
   “It is to ... that ...”}
2. ηη νεκσως αν ρηθεραθη ρηοώς (A I 183)
   {NB: the preposition ρ- (/ήρο-), the direct object mark, put in
   focus by the Second Present; a rhetorical question}
3. ερενρωμε ρζοτε αν ηνητου ρηεκακακε αλλα 2ντε ητεκ-
   κατου (Ch. 30)
   {NB: 2ντε - ρ- put in focus}
4. ηαι μεκιποογ εγξω ηδοογ ετεηνης αγω ετεηνητου αν
   (Ch. 91)
   {NB: ετεη- put in focus}
5. εγξακαηνηε εροογ επηρεηξη αν (A II 312)
   {NB: επηρεηξη put in focus, and negated by αν}
(d) Preterite:

1. *neimokhek* ἐπὶ ركز ἄντα ὥσφιν αὐτάθον πε (III 39)
2. *neiκι-ωφικ* ΝΑΙ ἁγαάτ ἄν ἀναμρωπία αὐτράκαναλον ΝΑΙ ιτείμεσ (III 147)
   (NB: ἁγαάτ 1st sgl. suffix -τ following the final double vowel indicating a laryngal consonant of the reinforcer (augens) ἁγαάτ; ἀνα- 1st sgl. form of the negative optative)
3. *nepιημφιεγε* ἰπεκοπεῖνοι ΝΗΙΝ ΝΗΜΟΙ (III 95)
4. ἀκακιν *πεκτφωβ* ἰπλοκεισ πε ἐφογκωσ εἰτρεγηνα ἔρωπω ἐναν εβολ πιν-2πεκκα (IV 27)
5. *νεκκσωβε* ἦ εφαγκα (A 1 53)
   (NB: the circumstantial “carrying on” the preterite conversion)
6. *ενετετίνενογιν* ἰπερρωποιε *νετετνάρροτε ζητούν άν πε* (III 88)
   (NB: this is an instance of the hypothetical use of the preterite converter (section 41): a remote-hypothetical (irrealis) supposition and its result clause, *νετετνα-, the past future (“you would not be afraid”))

15.2 THE EXISTENTIAL PRESENT: durative infinitive rheme, indefinite (indef. or zero-article) nominal or pronominal theme-actor

*ογκι-ογρωμε/ογα/ρωμε* σώμι “A man/someone is hearing”

Negative (ΜΗ)ιογκι-ογρωμε/ογα/ρωμε σώμι “No man/no one is hearing”

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

Stern par. 368; Steindorff par. 312; Till par. 266; Vergote par. 158(1);
Lambdin par. 158(1); Polotsky, “Conjugation System” parr. 19-21, 35

1. *ογκι-εναμνηψε* Δ-έοογ ΝΑΙ σιβόλ (III 199)
2. *ογκιζας* Δ-εσω 2ίτουτογ ΝΗΙΝ ΝΗΜΟΥ ΑΥΘ 2ίτηνπξοεις
   άν (III 170)
   [OBS. ΆΝ negates the adverbial 2ίτη: “and not...”]
3. *ογκιζοιε* ωτορτφ ιμωτιν (Orig. 307)
4. *μηλαααγ* ἐπὶ 2ίπεσωνι θηριονεγατε ταμιογ ύιε ειτεω-
   φυς εινητι επρωμε μαγαρ (P 130.4 104 124)
5. *μηφρο ουδε* αρχι μηλαααγ ιμενοις ιπρωμε αρχι 2ίπεκνυε
   νεπανυτε μαγαρ ΑΥΘ ρεμιε πξοεις ιτπε ιμικας (A
   I 164)
15.2.1 THE EXISTENTIAL PRESENT: durative infinitive rheme, converted (see Tables Fa, G)

(a) Circumstantial εογη-, εγή- / ε(μ)ων-ογρωμε/ουα/ρωμε
cωτη "A man/no man hearing" (also adnominal; 27-30); also ερεογρωμε
cωτη
(b) Relative ετεογη- / ετεμων-ογρωμε/ουα/ρωμε
cωτη ...
"whom a man/no man is hearing" (31-33); also ετεερογρωμε
cωτη ...
(d) Preterite νεογη-, νεγη- / νεμων-ογρωμε/ουα/ρωμε
cωτη "A man/no man was hearing", also in hypothetical (remote) condition (39-41); also νερεογρωμε
cωτη

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
TILL par. 327; VERGOTE parr. 164(1), 165(1), 166(3,4), 167(2,3); POLOTSKY, "Conjugation System" parr. 33-35

(a) Circumstantial:

1. όμοςε εμονας ενογε η άτομε εογηενκοουε δουη
eρογε ό�γαρ (III 116)
{NB: both circumstantial forms are here adnominal, qualifying ογρωμε; ςγαρ see ςργη-}
2. αρε εςραι εγεμτςωνε εμερωμε 

(Continued on next page)
(d) Preterite:

1. zaboi on enemipwme nlotk h tase (IV 180)  
   (NB: circumstantial preterite, expressing a remote wish (section 41.2): "would that ...")

16.1 THE PRESENT: STATIVE RHUME, personal pronoun, proper name, demonstrative or definite nominal theme-actor (Table F2; see Table I for the morphology of the stative form)

Negation: n-... an or ... an

NB: (1) statives of transitive verbs express passive state, and are opposed in the durative present to the durative infinitive of the verb (section 15): cwtph: coph "choose" vs. "chosen"; eipe: o "do, make" vs. "done"; tamio: tamhny "create" vs. "created". However, statives of intransitive verbs are mere replacements (alternants) of the infinitive in the durative present: with these verbs (meaning movement, posture, quality) the durative infinitive does not occur. Thus, for example, the stative nhny represents in the durative present the verb ei "come/go", nph represents pwt "run", etc.

(2) The stative of eipe "do, make", o, is used with n- + noun (mostly zero-article) to express "be in the status/capacity/circumstance of...", "have the (non-intransitive) quality of..."

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

Stern parr. 348-356; Steindorff parr. 316-317; Till parr. 251, 257; Vergote parr. 158(1); Lambdin parr. 21.2, 22.3, 24.2; Polotsky, "Conjugation System" parr. 3-9, 19-22, 24, 28-29

1. pwsb oyonh evol (III 74)
2. cec2oyp (III 90)
3. tnph ep2hke (Ch. 98)
4. teka2it teose nhpoek nhmpnoy (III 204)
5. anok 60ygal agw peqcooyp e2oguh olyal (III 24)
6. tnph ep2rai ene6hix agw tetnhy 2wttuthph (III 24)
7. tnhkeh tnh phnhphat agw tnwhh nhmpnhno ob (Ch. 127)
8. pectwth pwsb 2orp4 nhnhp4 (Ch. 116)

[OBS. The definite relative pet- is here topicalized, i.e. put outside the main construction as topic or prominent subject; "(as for) him who..."

9. nhpeqmeeye coytwh an e2oguh enmouye (III 44)
10. ετσευογ παί ο ἔπανιτις ἡναξηντῆ (Orig. 390)
11. τεκκανία πορᾶς ἅν ετσοφία σοῇ ἔτσοφία πορᾶς ἅν ἔτεκκλεσία (III 54)
12. ἤτοι ο ο ἡπευχοεις (Wess. 9 162)
13. σεο ἡπευχοεις... ὡς γαρ ενταγράπευχοις ελαγβκ εβολ γιτοτῆ... σεο ον ἡπευχοεις εμετανοει γηπημα ετογιγητῆ (III 136)
14. ἠτιτί αν ηντογ ἵννομος (Ch. 95)
15. ἤπετεξω ήμοι τοονε ερον αν (Ch. 95)
   {NB: πετ- the definite relative (“that which...”) is here the theme-actor of the durative present, negated by ἦ... αν}
16. πενα ωοοί ωαενες (III 117)
17. μενιν μεζ ἠγαθον νημ (IV 22)
18. ανοκ ὑσωη ἁγω ἄτησιν υματε (Λ II 276)
19. πογωμε ἐπρωμε ωογείτ (IV 167)
20. μεγαλεξεμα ματη (RE 10 159)
21. εψεξευγ-κεκοςοςκομε νηπερε νπαι επα-κο νκακε (Orig. 305)

16.1.1 THE STATIVE PREDICATION CONVERTED (see Tables F2, G):

(a) Circumstantial: ε:- εηςοτην / ερηπρωμε σωτην
   Negated: εη(n) ηςοτην αν / εμπρωμε σωτην αν, ερηπρωμε σωτην αν
   “He/the man (not) being chosen” (also adnominal; 27-30)
(b) Relative ετ-, ετε:- ετσοτην (ετ(δ)σοτην ... ) / ετερεπρωμε σωτην...
   Negated: ετσοτην αν, ετεησοτην αν / ετεεπρωμε σωτην αν...
   “who is (not) chosen” “(…) whom (he/you/the man) is/are (not) chosen” (31-33)
(c) Second Tense (Second Present) εηςοτην / ερηπρωμε σωτην “(It is ...) that he/the man is chosen” (34-38)
   Negated: εη(n)εηςοτην... αν / (η)ερηπρωμε σωτην... αν
   “(It is) not ... that he/the man is chosen”
(d) Preterite μενηςοτην (… πε)/ ερηπρωμε σωτην (… πε)
   Negated: μενηςοτην αν (… πε)/ ερηπρωμε σωτην αν (… πε)
   “He/the man was (not) chosen”, also in hypothetical (remote) condition (39-41) "
NB: (1) Following the converters, the pronominal themes are not prefix-pronouns as in the basic (unconverted) present, but suffix pronouns (Table A5a)

(2) With the 2nd sgl. fem. pronoun (i.e. zero), the converters have the same form as with a nominal theme: ἐτε-, ἐτε-, ἐτε-, ἐτε- or (for the relative) a special form ἐτε-.

(3) Relative, 1st sgl. ἐτ- = ἐτ-· (not *ἐτ- + ἐτ-!) (see (1))

(4) Note the two forms of the negated relative (according to the negativer: ἀ- ... ἀν or ... ἀν): ἐτείνεστοκαν, ἐτεινέστοκαν / ἐτεινεἴπωμενκαν, ἐτεινεἴπωμενκαν. Similarly for the circumstantial and prenominal.

(5) Note the difference between the circumstantial negated present: and the negated Second Present: ε-ν-τ-· κατακαν / ε-ν-τ-· κατακαν and n-ε-ν-τ-· κατακαν / n-ε-ν-τ-· κατακαν respectively.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 373, 391, 416-417, 428-429; STEINDORFF parr. 329-331, 376, 457, 462, 466; TILL parr. 317, 329, 470-471, 465-466, 473; VORGÖTE parr. 163(1), 164(1), 165(1), 166(1,3), 167(1,2); LAMBIDIN parr. 19.1, 24.1-2; POLOTSKY, “Conjugation System” parr. 10-18

(a) Circumstantial:
1. οὐγνοηύοντε εὐκή ἄνοιγμα ἐνδόγοντς κακαν εβολ (Ch. 110)
2. ἔτσουν ἄνογμα εὐκήτα ἄν κακασεει (Ch. 33)
3. σεξω ἄνενώησε εὐχητότ (Orig. 384)
4. Νύσβε ἄν εφ ἐβολ ἀνίπμυστηριόν ερεπσήτατο τετ Νοεικ (Ch. 51)
5. η οὐγνοήμεν ἄνογρωμεν ἄνογμα ἄποτνηρος εἰναξχεικ ὅῳον σμηακ ἄν εφ-ούνομ ἄμνησε ἄβοις εἰναξχεικ ὅῳον σμηακ ἄμνησε ἄμνησε ἄμνησεν ἄμνησεν (III 134)

(b) Relative:
1. κμα ετφονη ηντη (IV 121)
2. τέσομεν ετομοικ ποιεύομεν εταχκ εβολ ἀσβα ήμ ἅρματον (Wess. 9 141)
3. Ττοοο ήκοομεν ετομεν ετηνυ εβολ ἄρφωκ ενήτοε αν εναγιτογ εητεκιοτον τηρή (Ch. 29)
   {NB: ο: see ο: οατογ: see ο:}
4. ηνταν ετχοε (Ch. 127)
5. πνακε ετχε (III 153)
6. πῶς ἔδωκε ἑτερεπτωρῆς ἵπτω ἄνιμα (IV 1)
7. οὐτερεπεγείραν μεσ ἐβολὴ ἵπτου ἅγῳ ἑρεπεγείρθη σαλ νεναθη (Wess. 9 108)
   {NB: the circumstantial, coordinated by ἅγῳ, "carries on" the relative conversion}
8. πέτο ἡμαρτάς (Orig. 353)
9. ἐθεο ἐτού ἦμοσ (Ch. 10)
   {NB: ο ἦμοσ is the pronominal construction of ο ἦ-}
10. ταῦ ὀν τε ὢ ἐτεο ἡμαρτάς (A I 446)
    {NB: ἐτεο: rel. 2nd sgl. fem. + stative}

(c) Second Present:
1. ἑγνώογε ἀν πε ἰκ ἀλλὰ ἔγῳ ἵπται ἄνιμα ἄμαμμαμ (Ch. 109f.)
   {NB: ἰκ- is put in focus: "It is ... that...")
2. ἑρεπούγας ὁμοι τῶν τενογ (A II 53)
   {NB: τῶν is in focus}
3. ἀγχοσ ἕς-ἐποκαῖτ (Ch. 81)
   {NB: ἐποκαῖτ the stative of ἐγκο is emphasized (put in focus)}
4. ἑγνώε ἀτενογ ἐρο ἱπ γνώ (A II 540)
   {NB: ἱπ- ὦγ is in focus}
5. ἕγῳ ἔρισογ ὑγ ἄγῳ (III 110)
   {NB: ἄγῳ is in focus}
6. ἑρεμοκέ ὄγο ἦμας (A I 69)
   {NB: ἦ- ὄγ is in focus}

(d) Preterite:
1. ἑκνωτὴν πε ἐπὶ ἐπτατεί ἐπτατὴ (III 121)
   {NB: πε often accompanies the preterite conversion, apparently marking its clause as background for the adjacent context}
2. ἑγνώοη ἔεριτατειον ἐγνιέ ἄγος (III 48)
3. ἕρως ἔκοδομα ἶμπομορρά ἑρύαστ ἀν ἰλλαγ ἀλλὰ ἔγῳ ἱπνοσια ἐπὶ ἄγῳ ἑκνπατελα ἑπι ἔκο ἐτεμενησε ἀγχοζο ἄγογγει ἱπτμογοτε (P 130.2 4 84)
4. ἀρποὶ ἰδι-ἀωτ ἴμπος ἔνεκον ἐπτατατ ο ἐπτατα ἐπτατα ἰμπομορρα (III 169)
   {NB: ἐνεκ-: relative preterite (qualifying ἴμπος)}
5. ἕψυθ ἐνεκό ἐντατός ἄγος (IV 186)
   {NB: ἐνεκ-: relative preterite (qualifying ἐπτατα)}
6. ἑπροπο ὄγον ἄγος (Ch. 194)
16.2 THE EXISTENTIAL PRESENT: STATIVE RHEME, indefinite
(indef. or zero article) nominal or pronominal theme-actor:

οὐν-οὐρῳμε/οὐα/ρῳμε σοτπ “A man/someone is chosen”

μη-οὐρῳμε/οὐα ρῳμε σοτπ “No man/no one is chosen”

For Bibliography, see section 15.2

1. οὐκεκνθησα ωον εφοογ εματε (A 1 244f.)
2. μη ουκεκα αρουμε β ουκα αρουμε μηα κε ηηρικ (III 140)
3. μηκεκάζαλ ωοοπ (A 1 263)
4. μηκα αεκ αρουμε εορει μηκεκεσ-ετε μηου (III 27)
5. μηκοοογ ογαα βαραοογ αγω γοογ εβοεε βαραοογ (III 95)
   [OBS. Note the combination of an existential present (μηκοοογ
   ογαα) with an affirmation of existence with the existant qualified
   by an adnominal circumstantial (γοογ εβοεε)]
6. ουκεκοοε ο ηατνοουε (III 41)
7. ουκεκθουεος βηεοηεηειν ωοοπ (Wess. 9 143)
8. μηκουμε εοειμηε τουμε ερο ανον ηεκεηειηνοε (Wess. 9
   122)
9. ρημα δε εεηδωωεν εβολ γηηκ μηρωμε χοεε εετεεαη
   2η-εηνμα (IV 4)

16.2.1 THE EXISTENTIAL PRESENT: STATIVE RHEME, CON-
VERTED (see Tables E, G):

(a) Circumstantial εουν-, ευ-ε(μ)μη-ουρῳμε/ρῳμε σοτπ
   “A man/no man being chosen” (also adnominal; 27-30); also
   ερεοορῳμε σοτπ
(b) Relative ετεουν-ετεμη-ουρῳμε σοτπ... “(…) whom a
   man/no man is chosen” (31-33); also ετεεοορῳμε σοτπ...
(c) Preterite μημη-ουρῳμε σοτπ “A man/no man was chosen”,
   also in hypothetical (remote) condition (39-41); also μηεοο-
   ρῳμε σοτπ

For Bibliography, see section 15.2.1

(a) Circumstantial:
1. ρημα ... εουνζεηηνοβ μηηηηε εοογς ηηητογ (IV 68)
2. εουνζεηηινε ον ηηηη γηοοπ εμηνογηε βηη εβολ γηιωγ
   ερεεγκαρποσ σοτπ εματε αγω.εκιωγ (P 131.6 90 ρο)
THE FORMAL-FUNCTIONAL SYSTEM

{NB: κιωγ stative corresponding to the infinitive κινει}

3. ἐσεχε-εἰο ἰπεκαταφρονεὶ εἰμιλααγ ἱσώβ ιτεἰε ἵωοπ ἱπα ινιήτ (III 150)
   {NB: ινιήτ: the post-consonantal 1st sgl suffix -τ is zeroed following
   the final τ of ινιήτ-, the pronominal form of ινή-}

4. ἀκσωτε εἰογι ἵσρωογ ικειτοπος διν- ινε ερεκεογα
   ὁγις ἱσωῃ (III 38)

(b) Relative:

1. πνα ετεουγιομηηψε κοογς εροφ (Ch. 159)
2. παν ετεμικεραϊ σχω εροφ (A 1 391)
3. πετεμιψι ψοοπ ιτεμικηαγαος (RE 10 161)
4. πνογτε ετεμιλααγ ο ιετομο ιηαγραξ (A 1 382)

(c) Second Tense:

1. (not σενοστε) ετεμιψεεε ψοοπ εβολ ιιεκσηγα αγω
   εβολ ιιπααος τήψ (Judges 14:3)
   {NB: The Second Tense used in a rhetorical question: “It is
   that...?”}

(d) Preterite:

1. ενεμιογκεραγος γαρ πντ ιιωῃ εροττι εβολ ... (Z 461)
   {NB: This is the circumstantial preterite as a hypothetical remote
   condition, see section 41.1}

17.1 THE PRESENT-BASED FUTURE (Table F3): personal pronoun,
proper name, demonstrative or definite nominal theme-actor:

π/πρεμες ιαςωή ιη
negatived (יו)π/יוς πρες ιαςωή ιη

The Coptic future is present-based, predicking the stative ια (“in
the course of going”) followed by the infinitive; compare English “I am
going to...”, the French futur proche and similar periphrastic future
forms.

NB: The second person plural form of the future is τετιαςωή (only
one η, common to the prefix pronoun and the future characteristic -ια-)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

STERN par. 367, 379; STEINDORFF par. 318-320; TILL par. 252; VERCOTE par.
158(2); LAMBIN par. 19.2, 19.1; POLOTSKY, “Conjugation System” par. 5-9,
19-22, 25, 28-29; WILSON, Chapters 7-10;
1. κατασκηνή τε κατασκήνων εκτιμητικὴ (A I 131)
2. πευχὴς Ναξομος ζώος ξυστέρι ... αὐτὸς τετρακεφαλικὸς 
ζώος ζηρειχθείς (IV 481.)
3. ἐπιτρέπεσθε κατασκήνων κατασκήνων ἐφαμαμά 
τακτικὸς κατασκήνων (IV 35)
4. ἐπατόνωμος (Wess. 9 165)
5. κεναμερίτικα κατασκήνων κατασκήνων (IV 41)
6. τῆς ἀκινητοῦ κατασκήνων εὐπνοστὸν εὐπνοοῦστε (III 121)
7. κρυφὸς κατασκήνων (IV 86)
8. ξυστερικὴ τε χαλκοῦντα Δημακὶ κεναμερίτικας κατασκήνων 
τεκτοτομοῖ (IV 82)
[OBS. Note the prosodic difference between the nominal and the 
pronominal themes-actors (in the durative as well as base conjugation): 
the former may be separated from its theme by various 
expansions (or by particles), the latter may not, being in close 
juncture with the theme]
9. τῆς κατασκηνῆς ζωῆς αἰαλλά ἡ κατασκήνων ζωοῖ (III 38)
10. τῆς κατασκήνων ζωῆς αὐτὸ τοῦ κατερμοῦ (IV 19)
11. τῆς κατασκήνων ζωῆς αὖθις (III 198)
12. τῆς κατασκήνων ζωῆς αὐτῶν (P 130 50 220)
13. κατασκήνων αὐτῶν αὐτῶν (III 97)
14. κατασκήνων αὐτῶν αὐτῶν κατασκήνων αὐτῶν κατασκήνων (IV 38)
15. κατασκήνων αὐτῶν αὐτῶν κατασκήνων αὐτῶν κατασκήνων (IV 38)
16. κατασκήνων αὐτῶν αὐτῶν κατασκήνων αὐτῶν κατασκήνων (IV 38)
17. κατασκήνων αὐτῶν αὐτῶν κατασκήνων αὐτῶν κατασκήνων (IV 38)
18. κατασκήνων αὐτῶν αὐτῶν κατασκήνων αὐτῶν κατασκήνων (IV 38)
19. κατασκήνων αὐτῶν αὐτῶν κατασκήνων αὐτῶν κατασκήνων (IV 38)
20. κατασκήνων αὐτῶν αὐτῶν κατασκήνων αὐτῶν κατασκήνων (IV 38)
21. κατασκήνων αὐτῶν αὐτῶν κατασκήνων αὐτῶν κατασκήνων (IV 38)
22. κατασκήνων αὐτῶν αὐτῶν κατασκήνων αὐτῶν κατασκήνων (IV 38)
23. κατασκήνων αὐτῶν αὐτῶν κατασκήνων αὐτῶν κατασκήνων (IV 38)
24. κατασκήνων αὐτῶν αὐτῶν κατασκήνων αὐτῶν κατασκήνων (IV 38)
25. κατασκήνων αὐτῶν αὐτῶν κατασκήνων αὐτῶν κατασκήνων (IV 38)
26. κατασκήνων αὐτῶν αὐτῶν κατασκήνων αὐτῶν κατασκήνων (IV 38)
27. κατασκήνων αὐτῶν αὐτῶν κατασκήνων αὐτῶν κατασκήνων (IV 38)
28. κατασκήνων αὐτῶν αὐτῶν κατασκήνων αὐτῶν κατασκήνων (IV 38)
29. κατασκήνων αὐτῶν αὐτῶν κατασκήνων αὐτῶν κατασκήνων (IV 38)
30. κατασκήνων αὐτῶν αὐτῶν κατασκήνων αὐτῶν κατασκήνων (IV 38)

17.1.1 THE PRESENT-BASED FUTURE CONVERTED (Tables 
F3, G):

(a) Circumstantial ε-: εὐπρόσωπως / εὐπρόσωπως

(b) Relative έτε- έτε-: εὐπρόσωπως "who is about to hear" έτε(κ)

... / ετερεπρψιμε ναςωτί "whom he/you/the man is/are about to hear" (31-33)

Negatived ετναςωτί αν (ετενψαςωτί αν) / ετερεπρψιμε ναςωτί αν..., ετερεπρψιμε ναςωτί αν...

(c) Second Tense (Second Future) ε-: εψαςωτί / ερεπρψιμε ναςωτί "(It is ...) that he/the man is about to hear" (34-38)

Negatived (ν)εψαςωτί αν / (ν)ερεπρψιμε ναςωτί αν

The Second Future is also used following the conjunction σκε as consecutive and final clause (clause of result and purpose: "so that...", "in order to..."); σκεθα(α)c with εψα-, also expressing purpose, probably governs the circumstantial, not Second Future.

See texts 5-9 under (c) below.

(d) Preterite (Past Future) με-: μεψαςωτί / μερεπρψιμε ναςωτί "He/the man was about to hear/ would hear/ would have heard" (39-41): the Past Future is used especially to express remote or hypothetical result ("irrealis" apodosis, 41.3) and remote wish (41.2)

Negatived μεψαςωτί αν (... πε) / μερεπρψιμε ναςωτί αν (... πε)

NB: note the two forms of the circumstantial and relative future, according to the negativer (μ-... αν or ... αν): ετενψαςωτί αν, ετναςωτί αν / ετερεπρψιμε ναςωτί αν, ετερεπρψιμε ναςωτί αν; similarly (circumstantial, pronominal) εμπρψιμε ναςωτί αν, εμερεπρψιμε ναςωτί αν.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

Stern parr. 382, 418-419; Steindorff parr. 333, 440; Till parr. 318, 360-361; Vergote parr. 163(2), 164(2), 165(2), 166(1,3), 167(1,2,4), 180(1); Lambdin parr. 25.1(b), Polotsky, "Conjugation System" parr. 10-18

(a) Circumstantial:

1. κακαβαματ εκναχιτου εγονη επεκραψε αγω εγονη ετεκκαφερε εκνατ ιτον νιμ ιαγ (RE 10 161)

2. ουγοκαριους ηνυ ερεπνουτε ... ναγες-αγνε (A I 13)

   [OBS. The circumstantial specifies here an expression of time (ογκαριους)]

3. γκεκεπουνηρον ντοηναιξουν ηνογ (Ch. 52)

   {NB: ντοηναι - = εντηναι, the circumstantial converter zeroed before a syllabic nasal (ν)}
4. παραπέτεσθε ἡμᾶς ἴδομεν ἅμαρα ἵταχεῖτε ἐβολὰ Ἰππεῖρος ἐν ἑνάω ἐνήματος ἀν ἀγω ἐνναύνως ἀν ἐρω (Ch. 32)

(b) Relative:

1. ἵσω ὅμι οὐσον ἔτηνα βίτο γίμπει με οματομε βιβλίο ἐρω (IV 58)
   [OBS: ἵσω ὅμι topicalized (put forwards as a prominent subject):
   “(As for..., ...”; so too ὅτανι εἰς in the next text]

2. μονον ὅτανι εἰς ἠμέραν ἔμπραν ενακτοπε Ἰσώκιος μήδει (IV 4)

3. σαντωμ Ῥῆτας ἐντατοπρο γίμπεσω ἐντατοπρο ὅμι νατωμ (III 138)

4. προ ἐντατοποοεις ἒνα νὰκριν ἰναι ἑντατος ἐντοῦτο (Μου. 99)

5. πετάνοναστες ἀν οὔτερ οὐτακρωστία (III 154)

6. ἐνταμιον ὅταν ἔτηνα ουγό εβολὰ ἐσπρογο ἐν ἑνακτοπε ἰογο-
   ὅτανι εἰς ἠμέραν ἔμπραν ενακτοπε ἰογο-κακε (IV 19)
   {NB: -κακε- a lexemic premodifier: “do rather...”}

7. γαϊνε ἐντατοκατηγο-τεγγε τετο-τωκ (Ch. 27)

8. πετάνογοι εμογογο ἴογαρκον ἐματαρατυ ἐτεταγε (Ch. 73)
   {NB: ἐματα- Second Aorist, by which ἐτεταγε is emphasized
   (put in focus): “It is... that...”}

9. πκοεις ετηταγαν ἐντατον τηρο γίμπεσο ἐντατοκρίνε
   ἰόντες ἰνογο νούλα μινο (III 165)
   {NB: ἰόντες: ἰν- (direct object marking preposition) + ἰν-
   (plural def. article, assimilated to ἰν- + definite relative present
   predicating the stative ἰντο)}

(c) Second Future:

1. ερπάνεσωμον δε βαλλε εγκαμόλαγι ζηω (P 130.5 61 33)
   {NB: ζηω in focus}

2. εἰςακε-παλακε γιογωσω ἐβολ (III 70)
   {NB: γιογω- in focus}

3. εγκαμένας μεν ἐν τηταγαν ἔμπραν ἐτεταγε (III 98)
   {NB: ἐ- in focus}

4. ερπασον αναρχῶσον ψατων (Ch. 28)
   {NB: ψα- in focus}

5. ἰνπαγκτμεν ἐναίνε ἐκερεμε καρκτεν ἰνσωγ (Ch. 199)
   {NB: ἐκε-ερε-...να- consecutive: “so that...”}
6. ἀραὶσασκε ὁποιος ἂν ἦν ἃς-να ταρούνα ὧντε ἁροῦντε ὧντε ὧντε ὧντε ἐκκατ. μετέχει χρεσμοῦ (Ch. 199 = Lc. 6:38)
   (NB: ἐκκατ. final “in order that . . .”)
7. ἢμεραπτροπε ἐπιγυμναϊε ἐσοῦ ἡμερομο καθιματ-τόν να ἡμιπτόν ἡμαργαμα μισασκάκ μισακωβ (IV 22f.)
   (NB: ἕ-ἐκκατ. final)
8. ἀνάπνον μέ ἐνομν. ἁμερικτροπίμπαμε σογή-νιν ἄγιον ἀλητή ἀγοῦο (III 107)
9. ἢτοκ ἀν ἐσωκ πεννον ἡμιπτόν ἠτρεπτόταττε ἢμερικτροπε ἀλν ἁμερικτροπε ἅμερηλ ἡμερικτροπε ἕκκατ ἀκράβατ ἁνωτάτη ἐπταγος ἀγοῦοτε ἂνογερέ (III 99)

(d) Past Future
1. ἐνομνοογο ἐροό ακ (i.e. the well) ἠσταρασσε ἐροό ακ ἀτεχνε-μοογ (III 70)
2. (Had they known the things in our heart.) ἠναλλαγ οὐκατάμα-μοογ ἐροο (III 108)
3. ἐνομνουσι κα οὐκατάμασι ἐροσι ἐροης ἀναμνοογύ ἀνέκαμοκου ακ πε (RE 10 164)
4. ἐπετανούσε αποκανταμίνες ἢιγκα εἰρησις ἀναμνοογύ ἀνέκασαμοκου ακ πε (III 203)
   (NB: ἐπετα- Second Tense (Second Preterite Future), putting ἢιγκα ἢιγκα τενού ἐν ἁφος)
5. ἂνοι ἁον ἁνελαμπος ἂροογ αδινειατσωτή ἐτής αγ (Mun. 110)

17.2 THE EXISTENTIAL PRESENT-BASED FUTURE: indefinite (indef. or zero article) nominal or pronominal theme-actor

ὁγα-ὁγρωμε/ογα/ρωμε νακσωτή “A man/someone is going to hear”

ὁμ-ὁγρωμε/ογα/ρωμε νακσωτή “No man/no one is going to hear”

For Bibliography see section 15.2

1. ὠγαμας νακσωμε ἁκα-ασκ ἁρογν (Leyd. 332)
2. ἁ ὠγασκας ἁκακα μεν ὀσκα μενε τραγο ἀπν-ασκ (A II 24)
   (NB: a rhetorical question)
3. ἢμθαλλαγ ᾨρωμε νακσωμ (Wess. 9 133)
4. ἥθενε γερ χε-μὴνήμεξε ηαψῳε χωρίς-ψι ἰπιε (IV 172)  
5. οὐναγαφεον ην ηασῳε ηαρ (IV 188)  
6. μηρωμε ηαιμε (Wess. 9 141)  
7. εἰςποὶ ἀπόκεψε γερ ἰπνοὺτε ησαμαζτε αν ἦμπρωμε  
   εττανοβε ἰηναναγ νον ησαμαζτε ἰμον (III 161).  
8. μηζεμααίοι ηνηγ ανμελει επαρχίητα ἰηεγουεερε ζητε-  
   βο ριμ (Ch. 169)  
9. μηράν οὔαε εχημα ηνβονθει ερον (IV 3)  
10. οὐναγαζαν ηασῳε γεκε-πενγιασηθηον (A I 78)  
11. μηογρῳμε ηαξε-τηνε ζητεφκεω (Wess. 9 97)  

17.2.1 THE EXISTENTIAL PRESENT-BASED FUTURE, CONVERTED  
  (a) Circumstantial εὐνη-εμήν-ογρωμε ναςωτή "A man/no man  
      being about to hear" (also adnominal; 27-30); also ερεογρωμε  
      ναςωτη  
  (b) Relative ετευνή-ετεμήν-ογρωμε ναςωτή ... "(...) whom a  
      man/no man is about to hear" (31-33); also ετερεογρωμε  
      ναςωτή ...  
  (c) Second Tense ερεογρωμε ναςωτή "(It is...) that a man/  
      someone is about to hear" (34-38)  
  (d) Preterite νεουνή-νεμήν-ογρωμε ναςωτή "A man/no man was  
      about to hear" (39-41)  

For Bibliography, see section 15.2.1  
  (a) Circumstantial:  
1. ὅρος ετε εὐνηξας ἱασωε εζωγν επωψε εβολ ζίτωοτε (III  
   60)  
2. γενειοτε εὐνηζενρωμε ἰπιστοσ ναμε ναγινωεινε γιν-  
   τηναμνην ἰπνοειε ετεπνοισε αγισ ετεβνουσ ετε-  
   νηγιναγ εζωγν ενεγειοτε (III 172)  
3. οὔχω εὐνηζεννήμεε ενασωγου ναείρε νησενοθ ἰννοβε  
   γραζ ἱκτε (III 206)  
   {NB: ενασωγου circumstantial of the Adjective Verb ηασω-θ  
   "(He) is numerous" (section 22.2, 22.5), adnominal (qualifying  
   γενημημε)}  
  (b) Relative:  
1. πηα ετεμήνα νασῳε γεμαγ νυγανογου γινημημηταςεως  
   (RE 10 164)
THE FORMAL-FUNCTIONAL SYSTEM

(NB: ἐμψαν- = ἐμψαν- (Conditional))

2. ἦθε ετεμναλαγ ἐνθὴν ναῷῳ ἔπαγον ἐπίσωκ ἐπισωγιν ἔπναγ ἐπεύθανα ... ταί ὁν ὃ ἦθε ετεμναλαγ ἐπαί ἐθὴν ναῴξας ἔπναγ ἐπίναταλε ἐπαί ἐπιπροσφορα (IV 66)
   (NB: ἢ- γα “be last”)

3. ἦθε ετεμανεχχι ἦδον ἡ πορνος ἡ ρευτισμι-εἰαωλον ἡ ἰοεικ ἡ μαλακος ... ἡ κακληρονομεὶ ἦθεντερο ἔπνοομε ταί ὁν ὃ ἦθε ετεμαναίτο ἦδογο ἡ ρευτισμι-πακληρονομεὶ ἦθεντερο ἔπνοομε (III 192f.)

(c) Second Future:

1. εφοῦνα ναῳκοος ὁν ἕσι-ογ (III 72)
   (NB: ἕσι-, following a verb of saying, is obligatory; the interrogative ογ is in effect the direct object of ἔσω)

(d) Preterite (Past Future):

1. ἡμεισκε ἡναματε ἦμοογ ἐτεμνωκ (IV 84)
   [OBS. Note the double negation]

(*) 18 ASSORTED DURATIVE EXAMPLES: stative vs. infinitive, the STERN-JERNSTEDT Rule (definite or personal-pronoun direct object of the durative infinitive introduced by ἔν-ἔμο-., zero-article object immediately attached to the prenominal form of the infinitive)

1. ὑπρέποτε ἀν ζωλως ουδε ὑπήπτητῳ ἀν (III 38)
2. ἀγ μεν ἀμ ἐπὶ ἐβολ ἀγω σεμοτε ἦμοογ (III 45)
   [OBS. Note the use of the passive-equivalent 3rd person plural in the absence of a stative (there is no stative correspondent to the infinitive ἀμοτε); see OBS. to text 18]
3. ἐνεψ ἐνε πετενεψαν ἀν ἐμψαψε ἐγω πετεψαπ ἐσψα ἐμψα ἐμψασε (III 224)
   [OBS. ἀο εγ- “cease to ...”; in the circumstantial present complementing following a “descriptive verb” (“continue”, “stop”, “have already done”), the intransitive infinitive may replace the stative: hence ἐμψασε]
4. τετο ἦγογειν αἰκτακε τετολδ ἀσσιψε τετονίκ αἰμογ (Ch. 152)
   [OBS. Note here and in text 6 the alternation ἢ- vs. ἀ- (non-durative vs. durative conjugation, respectively), which distinguishes the copular or intransitive ἢ- (“be”) from the deriving-transitive ἢ- “make” (in dur. and non-dur. patterns)]
5. ἐστὶν ἡμών - τε χριστιανοί εἴσηγητε ἔνας ἄνθρωπον ὅπου εἰς ἑαυτὸν τὸ μικρότερον ἕνεκεν· (III 191)
6. ὥστε ὁ Χριστιανός εὐρύτερα ἑκάστῳ ἰδίωµατι (RE 10 163)
7. συν ἡμῶν εἰς τὸν κόσμον ἐποίησεν· (III 136)
8. ὁμοίως εἰς τὸν κόσμον εὐκάθισεν· (Ch. 125)
   (NB: Second Present forms, putting the prepositional phrases in focus)
9. ὁ γραών ἦσσος (i.e. Jesus) εὐπρεποῦς ἐβολὴν ἡμᾶς (Cat. 41)
10. συρῃς τὸν κόσμον εὐκατοίκησος (IV 24)
11. πάντα γίνεται ἔνεκεν τοῦ Κυρίου (IV 100)
12. ημῶν ἐν μικρότερον (said of the moral disease, in the members of the body) (IV 20)
   [OBS. For ἡμῶν and numerous other intransitive verbs, the morphological differentiation of infinitive and stative does not exist]
13. ἐντολής εἴσηγητε τὸν κόσμον εὐκατοίκησος (Ch. 91)
   (NB: τὸν κόσμον ἐν τῷ κόσμῳ... τῇ τοῦ κόσμου... “between X and Y’’)
14. ὑπάρξει οණ ἀντίστατος (IF 77, Dict. 456f.)
   [OBS. Note the opposition of intransitive stative in the durative conjugation vs. intransitive infinitive in the non-durative; see also texts 4, 6, 9, 22]
15. ἡμῶν ἐν τῇ τοῦ κόσμου (IV 48f.)
   [OBS. Note the opposition of the immediate object construction (ἂς) in the non-durative infinitive with the mediate construction (εἰς θέματα) in the durative, the verb and object (the 3rd sgl. feminine for “it’’ being equal; similarly in texts 20, 26, 27]
16. ἐν τῷ κόσμῳ εἰς τὸν κόσμον ἐν τῷ κόσμῳ ἔσται ἦν οὐν εὐκατοίκησος (III 77)
17. ὁμοίως ἐνεμάτω (P 130. 2 54 313)
18. συν ἡμῶν εὐκατοίκησος (Ch. 106)
   (NB: The combination of a 3rd person plural pronominal actor, direct object and εἰς ἑαυτὸν οὐκ ἔσται “by...” expresses in Coptic the equivalent of the passive voice. Thus, for “he was chosen by God” we have in Coptic what would be literally translated “They chose him by God”. See also text 2)
   [OBS. ὁμως is the only verb that is immediately connected with
its direct object in the durative, constituting an exception to the
Stern-Jernstedt Rule; see also text 29]
19. ζωινε μεν ευκαρπος οικαιραι γενκοουγε δε ευτ ιεπεγ-
καρπος ιεκατε ιε (Α 1 256)
{NB: ευ- circumstantial present)
[OBS. Note here the difference in construction between the definite
(πευ-) and zero-article direct objects, the former entering the
mediative (ιε-), the latter the immediate constructions]
20. ειτε νενταγεουγι ειτε μετευεεουγι ιμου αν (ΙΙΙ
132)
21. πεποιησ ιτπε αγω ετηθ οικαγ ιμαγ ετρηγογ-ιμεη-
η (Α 1 234)
22. σεπκεο ον ηιηα ιε (Α 1 96) ακη-πκηεηα (Ρ 130.2 137 337)
{NB: -πκε- is a lexeme premodifer, modifying the stative and
infinitive: “do also…” cf. “do rather” (see text 21) and -ρω-πη(ιη)
“do first…”)
23. ρω-ρηοτ ιτιιηηοτε (ΙV 78)
24. τεογωηηοβε ρωρη ωατηεει (ΙΙΙ 202)
{NB: ογω- a variant of ογη-., the construct state of ογω
orthographically identical with the absolute (object-less state))
25. ιεηε ιηακαοοε (Χ. 39)
26. αιαοοε ιηοκ (ΙΙΙ 117) τετηω ρε ιηοκ ιηιωτη (ΙΙΙ 135)
27. κεηρε ιηοκ ρ αιαοοε ιηελοο ιηηοη (Ε 66)
28. τετηουηε ιετηκαεηε ιετηνελεη ιηηιηεηοιο ιηηηυε
(Ε 71)
[OBS. Asyndetic (conjunctionless) coordination is characteristic of
enumerative-listing style]
29. ρωμε γαρ ηιο ουευηπυνη αγω ιηεουγη ιε εμογ (Ε 93)
UNIT (V): THE ADVERB PREDICATED
(sections 19-21)

19.1 The adverb predicated in the durative pattern: personal pronoun, demonstrative, Proper Name or definite nominal theme
19.1.1 Conversions

19.2 The adverb predicated in the existential present: an indefinite nominal (indef. or zero-determinated) or pronominal theme
19.2.1 Conversions

(*) 20.1 The adverb predicated in the delocutive Nominal Sentence pattern
(*) 20.2 The adverb predicated by the auxiliary in the tense base conjugation
21.1 ơyoq ɨ- “Woe unto...!”
21.1.1 Conversions
21.2 ɨaq “to him” predicated (modal-future possession predicated by ɨ-)

19.1 THE PRESENT: THE ADVERB PREDICATED IN THE DURATIVE PATTERN: personal pronoun, proper name or definite nominal theme (subject) (Table F4):

Like the durative infinitive and the stative rhemes (sections 15-18), the adverbial rheme (predicate) — prepositional phrase or “lexical” adverb denoting spatial rest situations or relationships and their metaphorical semantic extension (see section 5: “on a hill”, “in your mouth”, “with me”, “against you” “outside”, “here”, “there”, “where?” — is predicated in the present tense. The adverbial rheme follows the theme (subject): prefix pronoun (Table A 5b), demonstrative, proper name or definite noun. Like the durative conjugation, the adverb predication is negativized by (ɨ-)... an.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern patt. 366, 371; Steindorff patt. 310; Till patt. 249-250; Vergote par. 192(a); Lomdjin patt. 18.1, 24.2; Polotsky; “Conjugation System” patt. 5-6, 19-22, 28; Shisha-Havely patt. 1.2.1.1
1. ἐφογγόπος εἰσγογα (Wess. 9 171)
2. ἀνον τὴν ἡμεροτοπος (III 24)
3. ὁγγνον ιερασία (Wess. 9 145)
4. μὴ γαρ τοι νῆσιν Ἓρων (III 136)
5. ἐφογα ἄγω φόεσον ψανιμενες (Wess. 9 161)
6. προς ὁμολήπτητε ἡπεοθί ἐρεμελεοο εὐοπ ἄν μαγ-αγ (Ch. 159)
7. ἑοτε ἡποφοτε σημακ ἔχοσιν όμ (III 101)
8. προς ἡποίιια πεσοο ἡπείμα (III 79)
9. ἡττιήματε ἡρεκνομ ἑπράγμα εὐογ (Ch. 97)
   (NB: εὐογ adnominal circumstantial present; ὁμ static of λυσι)
10. τὴν ἐρημόπο ραρ ερον ἡτοτῇ ἡποκοις πεξιὶ πετα-<
11. ἡτοοῦ ἐφογος σειπνχες ἄν ἡτοκασων ἡνεργοφ (E 88)
12. σὴμα (IV 18)
13. σημα γαρ (A I 121)

19.1.1 THE ADVERB PREDICATED IN THE DURATIVE PATTERN: CONVERSIONS (Tables Fd, G)

(a) Circumstantial ἐ-: εἰκ现代农业 / επερπομεν ἡμαγ “He/the man being there” (also adnominal; 27-30)
   Negative ε(γ)ἡμαγ ἄν / ἐπερπομεν ἡμαγ ἄν, ἐρεφρομεν ἡμαγ ἄν
(b) Relative ετ-: ετιμαγ “who is there”
   ετιμαγ/ετεπρομοιεν ἡμαγ “where he/you/the man is/are” (31-33)
   Negative ετετιμαγ ἄν, ετιμαγ ἄν / ετεπρομοιεν ἡμαγ ἄν, ετεπρομοιεν ἡμαγ ἄν
(c) Second Tense ἐ-: εἰκ现代农业 and εἰκ现代农业 ... “There he is” and “(It is ...) that he is there” (34-38)
(d) Preterite νε-: νεκ现代农业 / νεπερπομοιεν ἡμαγ (νε) “He/the man was there”, also in hypothetical (remote) condition (39-41)

NB: note the two forms of the circumstantial and relative, according to the negative (ν- ... ἄν or ... ἄν): εἰκ现代农业 ἄν/ἐπερπομοιεν ἡμαγ ἄν, ετετιμαγ ἄν/ετεεπρομοιεν ἡμαγ ἄν or εἰκ现代农业 ἄν/ἐπερπομοιεν ἡμαγ ἄν, ετιμαγ ἄν/ετεεπρομοιεν ἡμαγ ἄν.
BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Steindorff parr. 374, 376, 459-460, 462-464; Till. parr. 317, 329, 443, 462; Vergote parr. 163(1), 164(1), 165(1), 166(1,3,4), 167(1,2); Lambdin par. 24.2; Polotsky, “Conjugation System” parr. 10-18

(a) Circumstantial:
1. καν εγγεμπα ντεκανε κλατουμε ον έκθειωκ (III 100)
2. πιαμε εγγελεμπα κικοτε κιγκανκωσμωτ άν ιποεικ
   -μεφοευρ (Rossi 2/3 8)
3. νιε αε νογαλε ετεθογαπθε εиε ηεηεθογαπθε
   -ςε ηεθηνεθοπθε άν (Ch. 87)
4. (If they defile themselves) είτε εγγεί-πσιον έίτε εγγειοκάν-
   -άσθην (IV 120)

(b) Relative:
1. πα νηογιήητη (III 151)
2. κάθα νηισφια ηιηνοτε ετιήηηκ (III 14)
3. τεγοοντ νήιηηαν (Ch. 105)
4. άνεγι ενηογυωνγη ετηθημηνε ηιεεοοο... άνεγι ενηιαοοκ
   -ετηθημηνε ηιεηιροομηνε (Mun. 105)
5. πρεθε ετεθεπλειν γιωμω (Wess. 9 138)
6. κεηεηηκοκοπ ηιηρι (Ch. 28)
7. κεηεηκοκοπ ηηηηηαν (Ch. 27)
   {NB: μη- coordinates here the 3rd plural with the 2nd sgl. in
   -ηνηκοκοπ. “... and theirs”}
8. κεηθηηη (III 160)
   [OBS. Contrast the use of the article ηη as a general formal
   antecedent of the relative (“they that ...”) with the specific lexical
   antecedent in text 3 above]
9. πεηεροου (IV 43)
   {NB: πεηεροου: the preposition ε-/επο- is used for the notion
   of owing or being indebted: the thing owed is theme (subject) or, as
   here, antecedent; the debitornoun/pronominal is governed by ε-}
10. πηα οη ετεθεπεηηα ηακαερθόν ηηεηη (Wess. 9 97)
11. πεηιηοκ ηεηογ ηεηεηη (III 205)
   {NB: the theme here, following the relative converter, is the 2nd sgl.
    fem. zero suffix)
   [OBS. Note the placement of the adverb ηεηογ, which (being
eclitic) occupies the second position in the prosodic unit (ante-
ccedent + relative form), while qualifying the relative clause alterna-
tively, it could be taken to qualify πεηιηοκ]
(c) Second Present:
1. ἐπτων πώλαξε (Ch. 166)
   (NB: τών in focus; also in the following texts)
   [OBS. Note the immediate apposition of the postposed nominal
    theme after ἐπτών, unintroduced by ἦν-]
2. ἐρευκέες τών (A I 212)
3. ἐπειδογας ὑοὸ πτώς τένος ἐργαμήενε (A II 53)
4. πνα ἐμέριεστε πᾶσα εἰμαῦ εἰμαῦ ἡπίπημφιος (Ch. 138)
5. ἐρευκαλ ἡμᾶς ἐτεβναγ αὐς πώλαξε ἐτεβνατο (Ch. 102)
   (NB: ἐτε- in focus)
6. ἐρεγιμπάζετ ἡρ-κόρα ὑοῦμνησῃ ἰωεῖρε (P 130.5 119 ῥο)
   (NB: ἡρ- in focus)

(d) Preterite:
1. ἡμεὶς ἐπερρωπεῖ τοῦ ἡγωτ ἦμεν (III 220)
2. πνόοι ἐπεγαρτηθ (Ch. 83)
   (NB: ἐμεγ- relative (or circumstantial) preterite, qualifying πνόου)

19.2 THE ADVERB PREDICATED IN THE EXISTENTIAL PRESENT: indefinite (indef. or zero article) nominal or pronominal theme

οὐν-ογρωμε/ογα/ρωμε ἡμαῦ "A man/someone is there"
μην-ογρωμε/ογα/ρωμε ἡμαὐ "No man/no one is there"

For Bibliography, see section 15.2

1. οὐνκέκοσμος ζάρος ἦναι (Orig. 303)
   [OBS. ζάρος ἦ- instead of the prenominal form ἠ-; ζάρο- is
    treated as if containing an inherently possessed noun, which is
    combined with a nominal possessor by ἐ- or ἦ-]
2. ἡμνοεὶ ἐροὶ ... ὑοὶ ἡμαῖκηνας γιάκτςγελάγην ἐτογαλλ
   (III 133)
3. μῆδομ ἦνο ἐπαί (Or. 165)
   (NB: ἦνο- expresses in this extremely common turn of phrase the
    possession of the inherently-possessed ("inalienable") ὑομ; similarly
    in the next text)
4. ὑγκογι τε ἄγω ἡμκιβε ἡμος (Ch. 148 = Song of Songs
   8:8)
5. μην οὐναζο ἤπειμα (III 72)
6. μῆςτορ ἡρυφ ἐροὶ ἐτβιτο ἡμαζαρμπληγούτη (A I 61)
   (NB: ἐτβιτο = ἐτβιτού)
19.2.1 THE ADVERB PREDICATED IN THE EXISTENTIAL PRESENT: CONVERSIONS (Tables Ea, G)

(a) Circumstantial ε-: ἑογή-ἐ μν- ογρωμε Ἰμαγ "A man/no man being there" (also adnominal; 27-30); also ἑρεογρωμε Ἰμαγ
(b) Relative ετε-: ετεογή-ἐτεμν- ογρωμε Ἰμαγ "(...) where a man/no man is" (31-33); also ετεεογρωμε Ἰμαγ
(d) Preterite ηε-: ηεογή-ηεμν- ογρωμε Ἰμαγ "A man/no man was there", also in hypothetical (remote) conditions (39-41)

For Bibliography, see section 15.2.1

(a) Circumstantial:
1. ὅγχαίε εμμενθοογ Ἰεντὴ (III 174)
2. ἕεμρωμε ηεταί Ἰεντὴ είτε ήοογτ είτε εγίενε ἕρεεσνθρε ἤνμ ε ἕθεσεε ε ύνη γάγθρυ (IV 95)

(b) Relative:
1. ἦκεζων ετεογήψυχη ἦσ θητογ (RE 10 164)
2. ηετεμνπατ ἦθοογ (III 143)
3. ηετεεογχαι θητοτή (Ryl. 67 p. 395)
4. ηετήνοογτε ετεογήβαλ θηθογ (Mun. 107)
5. ηετεογήογον ερογ (A I 96)

(d) Preterite:
1. ηεμπίνα δε θητογ (A I 37)

(*) 20 Non-situational adverbs, not predicated in the durative pattern are found as rhemes in the delocutive Nominal Sentence or (for other tenses than the present and in a non-durative mode of action) introduced by means of the auxiliary ἔ- into the tense-base conjugation.

(*) 20.1 THE ADVERB PREDICATED IN THE DELOCUTIVE NOMINAL SENTENCE PATTERN (see 3.2, 3.2.1)

# ADVERB (theme) + πε, τε, νε + NOUN (theme) #

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
TILL par. 248; *SHISHA-HALEVY par. 1.2.1.2
1. ἐπικίνδυνον ἕως τε τευχημονήν (IV 46)
2. ὑπεστημάτων τε τετρακτικῷ ἔνωσα τῆς ἦμας (P 130.1 135 333f.)
3. ἰτείρες ὁν ὡς μεγαλεπότοιολας τῆς ὑπηροχήν (III 103)
   [OBS. ἰτείρες is the adverb most common as rheme of the Nominal Sentence]
4. ἰτείρες ὁν πε τε ἵνα ἤτοι ἐκατοσφόος ἐφετεχθην ἰκνακτρογεϊς ἐγούν (IV 163f.)
5. καταταστάσεων πε πεντε ἱνετζεθυρ (Wess. 9 110)

(*)20.2 THE ADVERB PREDICATED BY THE AUXILIARY ἧ- IN THE TENSE-BASE CONJUGATION (sections 6-11)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Shisha-Halevy par. 1.2.1.3

1. ἀνταραφύσεις ἦ-τε κυρι (Wess. 9 171)
2. ἀκηράν ἧ-ερος (IV 12)

21 # NOUN + ἦ-/να- ("to") #: modal possession or attribution ("... be to ...!")

21.1 ὢς τρ-ph- "Woe unto ...!"

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Vergote par. 183; Shisha-Halevy p. 37f.

1. ὢς τρ-ph- ἀν ἄναναμελεῖ (A II 374)
2. ὢς τρ-ph- ἀν ἄρηπος ἐπλο ἦνεθτ ἱππεῖα ἱππεῦσε ἱπποῦστε ἱπποῦστε ἱπποῦστε ἱπποῦστε (III 199)
   {NB: ἀν: 2nd sgl. fem.}
3. ὢς τρ-ph- ἤνεθτ ὡς ἤπως ἔνιππαρες ἐν ἔνεπροςταιμα ἤποικος (Wess. 9 160)
   [OBS. The adnominal circumstantial qualifying NOUN + ἤνεθτ shows ἤνεθτ to be quantifying-distributive rather than defining and to mean "any..." rather than "all..."]
4. ὢς τρ-ph- ἴνεθταμετα-ντοτοὺς Ὠν ἐπικίνδυν ἦνεθτ (III 154)
   {NB: τοτοὺς see τοὺς-}
5. οὐοεὶ ἡμετο ἀναφέβεται ἡγαλαγ γραὶ ἡς ποι (III 159)
6. οὐοεὶ καὶ οὐοεὶ ἠμελεστὸν ἀνάσωμα ἔτερεπειπώμενῃ ἡς τοῦ ἄνθρωπος (A II 39)

21.1.1 οὐοεὶ ἡ- CONVERTED

(a) Circumstantial οὐοεὶ ἡ-
(b) Relative ἐτεογοεὶ ἡ-
(d) Preterite νεογοεὶ ἡ-

(a) Circumstantial:

1. σειναύζωπε ἐνογοὶ ἡγαλαγ (IV 4)
   [OBS. ὑποτε as auxiliary supplies οὐοεὶ ἡ- with tense characterizations other than the present]
2. ἵνα ἡς τενοῦ ἐνογοὶ ἀν ἡμετερῶ ἀνεγεφέραν γραὶ ἐνεκείπει ἐτειμαγ ἑκατε ὑδος (A II 155)
   [NB: this is the circumstantial replacing the Second Tense as the “that...” constituent in a Cleft Sentence, following the focus ἵνα ἡς ἡς "How (is it) that...?"]
   [OBS. On the circumstantial as the topic constituent in a Cleft Sentence, see SHISHA-HALEVY pp. 84-87]

(b) Relative:

1. πκαϊρος ἐτεογοι ἡγαλ ἡς τοῦ (IV 94)
2. οὐοι ἡγαλ ἀν ἡς ἐτεογοι ἀνεικοογε (A II 11)

(d) Preterite:

1. νεογοεὶ καὶ ἀειομποῖρῳ ἅγῳ ἠμῖνογο ἱοῖ (Wess. 9 142)
2. νεογοι ἡγαλ ἁρ ἵνα καϊρος ἐτεναιατοῦ ἡς τοῦ (IV 94)
   [NB: ἐτεναιατοῦ relative of ἁιατ- "blessed is..." (section 23.1)]

21.2 οὐογο ἡ- “Glory be to...”

This modal-future predication of possession is a text-final fixed formula.

1. πεῖτε ἵτε πενχοεις καὶ οὐογο γὰρ ἔτενες ἑνεγας (III 224)
   [OBS. καὶ οὐογο γὰρ "He, to whom..." — there is no relative conversion of this pattern]
2. κακμαᾶτ τιοῦτε οὐογο γὰρ ἀν ἑνεκυμηρε ἐτεκμαᾶτ (Wess. 9 146)
3. οὐογο ἄτεφρα ἐτογας κοι ἄν ἑνεκυμηρε ἑνεγαστάντο ἐτεργά ἂγῳ ἄνομοςγιον (IV 197)
UNIT (VI): SYNTHETIC CONJUGATION FORMS WITH SUFFixed SUBJECT: PRESENT TENSE, NARRATIVE PAST
(sections 22-26)

22 THE ADJECTIVE VERBS
22.1 The PRESENT: the Adjective Verb ḳanoy-q "(He) is good, fair"
22.2 The PRESENT: the Adjective Verb ḳawyw-q "(They) are numerous" "(He) is plentiful"
22.3 The PRESENT: the Adjective Verb ḳatɔq-q "(He) is great"
22.4 The PRESENT: the Adjective Verb ḳeɔw-q "(He) is beautiful/ugly"
22.5 The Adjective Verbs converted

23 The PRESENT: ḳaɪtaq- ṣ “Blessed is (he)"
23.1 ḳaɪtaq- ṣ converted

24 The PRESENT: (e)₂naq-q "(He) is willing"
24.1 (e)₂naq-q converted
24.2 ṣ₂naq- “be willing” in various conjugation forms outside the present

25 ḳewya- “(You) do not know”, “perhaps” (in the generic 2nd person sgl. masc.): AORIST

26 ḳeɔya-q "(He) said:" PAST NARRATIVE, introducing direct speech

22 THE PRESENT: ADJECTIVE VERBS or “conjugated adjectives” (Table H):
This is a formal group made up of five or six synthetic conjugation forms, all beginning with ḳe- or ḳa-, all having their theme-“actor” (noun or pronoun) attached at the end, all predicating a present quality of the theme (they are thus, in a functional sense, complementary to the durative present predicating the stative, 16.1-2). They are main-clause
forms, fully convertible and negated by ... an. Some have a special prenominal alternant form distinct from the one preceding the suffix pronoun theme; the nominal theme, introduced by Ṇ6ī-, may follow the 3rd person pronominal one.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern par. 308-310; Steindorff par. 297; Till par. 284; Vergote par. 169; Lambdin par. 29.2; Polotsky, "Conjugation System" par. 36

22.1 The ADJECTIVE VERB Ṇ4anoγ- q "(He) is good, fair": Ṇ4anoγ-/ neoγ- (nane-)

1. ενεκανανογι κοινωνει Ṇ4αμα ενεκανανογι αν Ṇηρκοινωνει (III 30)
2. Ṇ4ανογεπτινογροτ w Ṇμερατε (III 27)
3. Ṇανογνεκακие Ṇαγογ eθηρη (III 53)
4. Ṇανογς σαν εμογ Ṇαγογ εωης Ṇηενθαλιπς (Wess. 9 174)
   [OBS. Ṇαγογ-, with the neutric feminine "it", is common for "it were better that..." and the like; it is complemented by the infinitive or by eθεςωτι (section 9.1 b)]
5. Ṇανογς δε εβιπψυνε Ṇεεενρυ ετηγυ Ṇηενψυνε (P 30.2 102 22)
6. Ṇανογνπαγι Ṇβσκ ετεκκανεια Ṇπνουτε Ṇανογτνεκτια Ṇανογπνευνυ Ṇεκρατεγε Ṇοκ ετεκκανειε Ṇανογςων σεм Ṇηεις Ṇανανκαιον ... Ṇανογνπουων Ṇανογπαγος δε ον (IV 174f.)
7. Ṇανογνειπρουγ αν εθεςωτι ερογ (Wess. 9 87)

22.2 The ADJECTIVE VERB Ṇ4ωγ- q "(They) are numerous", "(He) is plentiful": Ṇ4ωγ-/ neoeye-

1. Ṇωενεκαλοε (III 31)
2. Ṇωεντινογυ ετιογον Ṇαγ Ṇηνε νιμ Ṇωεπνογυ Ṇωεπατ Ṇωενεγυγαπροντα τηρογ (IV 22)
3. Ṇωογογ on Ṇηιαργος (III 115)
   [OBS. Ṇωγ- Ṇ铋- is post-classic, a by-construction for the Scripture Coptic neoeye-]
4. Ṇωωρ Ṇηπετινεκε ετιογον νητιν Ṇηεντινειε τηρογ (III 179)
5. παραλώγισμα υπόλοιπον της επικρατής ενδικεφαλείας επηρεάζει την ζωή (IV 28)
6. επεξεργασία της ενδικεφαλείας επηρεάζει την ζωή (E 83)

22.3 The ADJECTIVE VERB 

1. η νεσούσια μη 

2. παίζει 

22.4 The ADJECTIVE VERB 

1. η νεσούσια μη 

2. σεκοσμεί 

3. παίζει 

4. 

5. 

22.5 THE ADJECTIVE VERBS CONVERTED (see Tables H, G)

(a) Circumstantial ενανούμε 
(b) Relative ενανούμε 
(c) Second Tense ενανούμε 
(d) Preterite ενανούμε 

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

Sterne parr. 311, 405, 408; Steinendorff parr. 374, 461; Till parr. 284; Vergote parr. 171; Lambdin parr. 29.2; Polotsky, "Conjugation System" parr. 37

(a) Circumstantial:
1. "ογκώμενες ενανούμενα (Ch. 37)
2. "ογκώμενες ενανούμενα (Wess. 9 165)"
3. γενώθηκε ενανωγών ας (P 131.7 40 ρο)
4. ἔμεπαες εν ανακαί ἐπεταφώσατε ἰμεταξισθην (III 222)
5. γενημειούση ενασῳσσ (III 164)
6. γεμαί ενεσωσσ ἀγὼ ενασωγών (P 130.2 7 89)
7. ογειώτας ο γονον ἄλεης τιπετο ἱνεόηκ ετεφθεοερ
   ἀλλα επηγοες-με ἢνοι φαγον ἒκοι ἕλιων σικλω
   εφα ἐφην γῆγην ἤνεοι θείοις ἢ ανακον ενασωνευτ-
   ικεβε ἰκωσ (Ch. 170)

(b) Relative:
1. πως εσειονογά (Wess. 9 167)
2. πωςει ετεναφετεφήμε (IV 19)
3. τεταναγάει ετανάωεσ ερογν εροι (III 13)
4. ἀγ πε πκεβωτ-ἀγ ὁκερανος ετανάας εἰς (Ch.
   122£)
5. ναι ενεσωγουας κεν ἰμπεγαλι γίςονγι ας ὁγασαουν πε
   ετακαοσ ερογν εταγογ (IV 3)
6. πωςει ἰδειει εν ετενδογ (Wess. 9 110)
7. πεκε ετενάφεπενα (RE 11 16)
8. τζοεετε ἰμπεγαλε ετανάφεςογντας ας (IV 162)
9. τζω λοξοετε ενεσωγος εναγ ερος (Ch. 152)
10. ἰμπετναας ερογ (Ch. 135£)
    {NB: ερογ comparative: “than Himself”}

(c) Second Present:
1. εφακαογομογενασμοερε ωεις ας εγκων ικωσογ ἰμεπεγακη
   εναντογ νογιν τεταντετετετ κατο ενας ογογι (IV 96)
   {NB: νογι in focus}
2. μαντως ενας ẓηπηπσιο ίκεςογ (Orig. 807)
   {NB: ενας = ενανας; ẓηπ- in focus}
3. ẓηπνογ ενααας ενεγερθυ (Ch. 135)
   {NB: ẓηπνογ in focus}
   [OBS. This may be a case of the circumstantial and not Second
   Tense conversion; the circumstantial is used as the “that…” consti-
   tuent of a Cleft Sentence after its focus: see Shisha-Halevy pp. 87-
   94]

(d) Preterite:
1. ενασωνευτε εταφεμτο εβολ (III 27)
2. γαν γαφ ἰκοος ενασωνευτάγιο ẓμετξοςε (Ch. 124)
3. οὐκ ἔρωμε ἰναίατον εἴματε ἵππας τινος εἰς ἐνεπονὸν ἅματσι τρεῖς ἡμελία (Ch. 134)
4. ἐνεπονὸν αὐτὸν ἰναίατον τινος ἐνυφίνει το ἡμιονὸν ἰναίατον τινος ἐρότει (Ch. 173)
   (NB: this is the circumstantial preterite, ἐνε- used as the supposition of a remote hypothetical condition ("irrealis"))

23. **THE PRESENT: ξαίατ = ὑ “Blessed is (he)”**

**BIBLIOGRAPHY:**
Stern par. 198; Till par. 284 Obs.; Vergote par. 183

1. ἵππας τοιοῦ ἰναίατον ἰνεπονὸν οὐκ ἔρωμε ἰναίατον ἰναίατον ἰναίατον (Orig. 651)
2. οὐκ ἔρωμε ἰναίατον ἰνεπονὸν τοιοῦ ἰναίατον ἰναίατον ἰναίατον (Ch. 100)
   (NB: ἰναίατον ἰναίατον ἰναίατον ἰναίατον ἰναίατον indefinite nominalized relative of the Adjective Verb ἰναίατον)
3. ἵππας τοιοῦ ἰναίατον ἰναίατον ἰναίατον (Ch. 109)
4. ἵππας τοιοῦ ἰναίατον ἰναίατον ἰναίατον ἰναίατον ἰναίατον (III 151)
5. ξαίατ ἔρωμε ξαίατ ἔρωμε ξαίατ ἔρωμε ξαίατ ἔρωμε (Young 4)
   (NB: ἐρ- ἔρωμε “be/become as”)

23.1 ξαίατ = CONVERTED (Table G)

(a) Circumstantial ἐξαίατ = ὑ “He being blessed” (28.1)
(b) Relative ετεξαίατ = ὑ “that (he) is blessed” (31.2)
(c) Second Tense ἐξαίατ = ὑ “(It is ...) that (he) is blessed” (34.1)

(a) Circumstantial:
1. οὐκ ἔρωμε τοιοῦ εἴματε ἵππας τοιοῦ ἰναίατον (A II 374)
   (OBS. ἰναίατον reinforcer: “they, on the other hand”)
(b) Relative:
1. ταὶ τοῦ ὑτεξαίατον ἰναίατον ἰναίατον ἰναίατον (III 68)
(c) Second Tense:

1. ἐναίατῇ γὰρ ἂν ἢπτεκαθεθεὶ κεαὐξῳ ἢγεφυακε ὡγῆτε ἐναίατα ἤπτεκαθεθεὶ  ἢνοογ  ἢεαγυσατῇ  ἢεφυακε ἄλλα ἐναίατῃ ἢπτεκαθεθεὶ ἢφαγναρας ἢπτεξῳ ἢ-  ἢνοογ  ἀγν ἦατα ἤπτεκαθεθεὶ  ἢνοογ ἢγςαντὶπα-  ρας ἤπτεγυσατῇ ἢροογ (Cl. Pr. 33 I)

{NB: the Second Tense puts the ἢ- clauses in focus: “It is because... that...”, “It is not because... that...”}

24 THE PRESENT: (ε)2να - q “(He) wishes”, “(He) is willing”

Negatives: (ν-)2να - ἄν

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern par. 198; Steindorff par. 295(4); Till par. 283; Vergote par. 170(6); PoLOTSKY Rev. Till p. 231f.

1. λάρνως εἰςαγ ἄν εἰτέλατῃ ἢρῳ μακαρίς ἢμοογ ἐπτρη (II 161)
2. εἰςαγ ἄν ἄνοῃ ἢπεγαγελιον ἢπνοντῃ ἢμάτῃ ἄν ἄλλα  ἤνκεψυχῃ (Ch. 109)
3. ἡν νηπ νηπ εἰςαγας εἰςπενελεκ εἰςπενεἰς εἰςρῆς ἢπετ-  ἰωβί ἄγω χκαταλαλεὶ ἄν πκαταλαλεὶ ἄνπτ (IV 23)
4. ἢεξε-εἰςαγ ἄν εἰςωτῇ ἢτογςαμε ἢως- ἢφτη- ἢρωβ ... εἰς ἄντο ἄντο εἰςωτῇ ἢβοι ἄναχωρεὶ ἄντο (A 1 73)

{NB: εἰςαγ 2nd sgl. fem. person}

24.1 (ε)2να - CONVERTED

(a) Circumstantial εἰςνα - q “(he) being willing/unwilling” (also adnominal; 27-30)
(b) Relative ετεςνα - “who is willing”, “what (He) wishes” (31-33)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern par. 407; Till parr. 198, 468, 483; Vergote par. 171, p. 225

(a) Circumstantial:
1. ἀνὖνοογ ὕμωτῆ ἢπεικεκαπ εἰςνα ἄν (P 130.1 131 328)
2. ἄναχῳ ἂν ἂν ἢπεικακε ἢναν ἄν ἢξοος (A II 191)
24.2 ἡρω — "be willing" in various conjugation forms outside the present

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
TILL pgr. 283 Obs.; VERGOTE pgr. 170(6); LAMBDIN pgr. 20.2(4); POLOTSKY, Rev.
Till p. 231f., "Conjugation System" p. 402

1. ἥρω ἐτρέψωμε εγώ ἡρω (IV 29)
2. ἡρω ἅν ἡ ἐγρα (III 200)
3. ἡρω ἅν ἅν ἐγρα (A II 278)
4. ἡρω καὶ ὁ γιω (A I 83)
   (NB: ἡρω and ὁ γιω are imperatives)
5. ὑγεσκεΐας εἰκαὶς ἡμῖν ἔρωμε ἔταξεν ἐκαγα ἐγρα (P 130.2 104)
6. ἡρω ἔστητος ἀπετείγει ἐπεκτείνε (Ch. 142)
7. ἡρω ἀπεις ἐπι ἐγρα ἐπι ἂν ἐπι ἂν (III 200)
   (NB: 2nd person sgl. fem. actor and possessor; boal for ἐπι)

25. ἰηω — "(He) does not know"; in the generic 2nd person sgl.
masc., ἰηωκ "perhaps"

Rarely also in the relative conversion: ἐτεμεισω—
1. ἡσαὶ ἔσ-εἰναξ-ογ (Wess. 9 66)
   {NB: εἰναξ- Second Future, putting ογ in focus: "What is it I shall say"}
2. ἡσαὶ ΝΕΙΖΩΝ ζΗΜ ΕΙΔΗΑΓ ΕΤΖΗΝΕΛΚΩ ἙΣΑΓΩΓΩ
   ΜΗΠΤΗΝ ΖΗΠΤΡΕΥΨΗΝ ΜΙΠΕΛΚΩ (III 48)
   {NB: εἰςα-: Second Aorist}
3. ἡσεὶ ξηνίη νε ογ νε (A I 76)
   {NB: 2nd person sgl. fem. actor}
4. (Even if he does not give alms to the poor because of his callousness
   or misanthropy,) ἡσαὶ ζΗΜ ΑΤΝ ΝΑΕ ΕΤΒΕΟΥΣΗΝ (III 65)
5. ἡσαὶ ΛΙΧΙΖΩΝΕ ΝΒΟΙΣ ΝΗΠΙΤΤΥΤΗΝ ΝΠΙΕΙΜΕ (Wess. 9 164)
   {NB: ΝΠΙ- = ετρήπ-, circumstantial neg. perfect}
6. ἡσαὶ ΡΩ ΟΥΝΓΕΝΩΑΣΕ ΝΗΠΤΟΥ ΩΣΕΙ ᾮ ΕΤΕΡΨΗΜΕ
   ΣΩΤΗ ΕΡΟΟΥ (IV 72)
   {NB: ΩΣΕΙ = εὑσε circumstantial}
7. ἡσαὶ ΝΗΠΝΑΓ ΕΤΖΗΝΑΚΩ ΝΕΩΒΗ ΝΠΙΚΟΣΜΟΣ (BL 8800 (A) fol.
   6 ro)
8. ΝΟΕ ΟΝ ΕΤΕΜΕΣΕΙ ΕΠΤΨΨΗ ΝΗΠΗΤ ΝΤΕΙΚΕΟΥΕΙ ... (Leyd.
   411)
   {NB: μεσε 2nd sgl. fem.}
9. ΝΤΕΜΕΣΘΑΝ ΕΡΟΟΥ ΧΕΟΥ ΝΕ (IF apud Dict. 201)

26. πεξα- q NARRATIVE PAST: "(He) said ...", introducing
   speech or quotation, especially dialogue-in-narration

πεξα- may open, conclude or be inserted parenthetically in the
reported speech. When initial, it is followed by ἔσ-.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern par. 268, 527; Steindorff par. 295(2); Till par. 285; Vergote par. 170(2)

1. πεξαὶ ἔξανρψει ἡμερπακε ἦγογ έπογοειν ηπιξαος
   ἔξανρψείπογοειν ἦγογ επκακε (Ch. 17)
2. πετμε ἦνοι πεξαὶ ζΗΜΑΡΕΖ ΕΠΑΨΑΧΕ (A I 38)
3. εἰςμοος ζηξήςοτοογ πεξιπετςζω ἦνοι ζηναγ εγγων
   (III 44)
4. γενώστε τηρού πεξαθε (III 118)
5. πεξεπηνούτε να ερευνήτε σεναρί ητεκψυχη ητοτή 
        ητειογύφη (III 111)
6. ἔμηραξε σώον ἐκατερείς πεξεπεναίες πνούτε (Ch. 169)
7. πεξαθε γαρ ἕβεπαποστόλος χενάι ετεπεγνούτε πε 
        ρότογ (Ch. 110)
8. απογιώση χειού πε αρι πριπ πε πεξαί χεζίμνον αέραγε- 
        γενκούρε ου χεντή ητοογ πε πεξαί χεζίμνον πεξαθ 
        χεζεί ογ πε πεξαί χεζπαβε πε τβοτε ἐπαναίες (Ch. 105)
9. πεξητήν χε-ἐντανώάκτε ἐσωκ ρῦογ (Wess. 9 99)
        {NB: ἐντανώάκτε Second Perfect, putting ρῦογ in focus}
10. πεξεογια η 2ονε χετβεγού απα η ναί πωτ ἐβαλ ἐτει- 
        μνεί ἐρώμε (A 1 60)
11. πεξαθε ἄνογση χεμπρέπωάκε ἐκαθα ρῦογπηστ (A 1 74)
        {NB: 2nd sgl. fcm. actor}
SECOND PART (Units I-IV)
TOPICS OF ADVANCED SYNTAX

UNIT I: CONVERSION (sections 27-41)
UNIT II: THE CONJUNCTIVE (sections 42-43)
UNIT III: CONDITIONAL COMPLEXES (sections 44-48)
UNIT IV: THE INFINITIVE OUTSIDE CONJUGATION (sections 49-51)
UNIT (I): CONVERSION

(A) THE CIRCUMSTANTIAL CONVERSION: ADNOMINAL (ADNEXAL), ADVERBAL, PREMODIFYING

27.1 Indefinite/zero noun, indef. pronoun expanded by the circumstantial (ADNOMINAL circumstantial)
27.2 Non expressing time expanded by the circumstantial (ADNOMINAL circumstantial)
27.3 A noun/personal pronoun *predicatively* expanded by the circum- stantial (ADNOMINAL ADNEXAL circumstantial)

28.1 A clause followed (expanded) by the circumstantial (MODIFIER ["adverbial"] circumstantial)
28.2 A verb of incomplete predication ("descriptive verb") expanded by the circumstantial (ADVERBAL ADNEXAL circumstantial, as *predicative complement*)
28.3 The circumstantial preceding the main clause (PREMODIFYING circumstantial)

29.1 The circumstantial carrying on a relative or preterite conversion

30 Some special thematic roles of the circumstantial

(A) THE CIRCUMSTANTIAL CONVERSION:

ε- + clause (conjugation form or Nominal Sentence): see Table G

The adnominal circumstantial expands (qualifies, describes) an indefinite noun or pronoun or a nominal expression of time or occasion (27.1-2).

The adnexal circumstantial expands and adjoins a predicate (rHEME) to a definite or indefinite noun or any pronoun, which is thus expanded predicatively (27.3).

The modifier or adverbial circumstantial expands a clause, modifying it by referring it circumstantially or both predicatively and circumstantially to an act or state (28.1-2).
27.1 INDEFINITE/ZERO-DET. NOUNS or INDEFINITE PRO-
OUNS EXPANDED BY THE CIRCUMSTANTIAL (adnominal
circumstantial): “a man who ...”, “one who ...”

The relative converter does not occur as an expansion (qualification,
description) of indefinite nouns or pronouns: the circumstantial is the
form found in this role.

1. οὐχὶ εὑρὼτῇ ἐνανομῇ εὐρήρε γίγαστε (IV 29)
2. ζενταρένοντο οὐδὲ οἰμτούνες ζήνεγαναγ δινεγαλά-
νας (IV 47)
3. εἴπω εὑρότῳ (IV 154)
   [NB: the zero-det. feminine noun is resumed by a masculine
   pronoun in the circumstantial form; in fact, the zero article is
   resumed, not the lexeme: zero is resumed by the masculine as a
gender-indifferent (“neuter”) form. See Shisha-Halevy, Chapter 5]
4. εβῳ διὸ ἐρχηκ εβόλ (III 93)
5. οὐκογιζσ τιναξοδ ἑογιζτε πε (Wess. 9 168)
   {OBS. ογιζτε “fearsome” (“one of fear”): see Polotsky, “Nom-
   inalsatz und Cleft Sentence” p. 418f., Shishia-Halevy p. 142ff.]}
6. ἀναγνώστες ἤντεγις ἄν ἐγκαβεογ (Ch. 33)
7. ζενάγ εὐγζων εὐκαπάνη εὑμισθε μὴ κεκατὼν εὐγίκχκαζ
   (III 44)
8. κρεία σιμ ἤρωμε εὑπισκε (III 71)
9. οὐκεκισῷ δὲ ὁ ἐπελασ ἐντεῦθεν ἤμοι ἀν ἤενονοβε
   πε (III 201)
   {NB: ε- ἄρε- a variant 2nd sgl. fem. form of the circ. perfect}
10. ἀτετεὶκεψε εὔκοονς ἄτεταπσταζοῦν ἃν (Leid. 296f.)
    {NB: ἄτετα- = ἄτετα-}]
11. γοινε εἰγρζζεννοῦ ἡσε ψαντογκαλο επάτε γενκοογε
    εὐμογ εγκαβтики (III 44)
12. ὑγα εὐκωτ μὴνομισθε εὐγοστῳ ἤσω (IV 94)
27.2 Nouns Expressing Time or Occasion Expanded by the Circumstantial (adnominal circumstantial): “the time when...”

1. ηνογνωγ ενσωγγ επραν νικ (Ch. 156)
2. τειωμότε νογνω σιοσ επισε (III 37)
3. ἔπαιναγ ενειρεν ἐνσωβ νιν ἀικαοικον (IV 102)
4. πνοπ τη περος ενσωγγ ερογν (A I 123)
   [OBS. Contrast the stative here (“when we are gathered”) with the infinitive in text 1 (“as we gather”)]
5. πνοπ ενεγρασσθν (Ch. 83)
   [NB: ενεγ- circumstantial (or relative?) imperfect: section 39.1.1]
6. ἔπαιναγ ετεταφλογος νινσογς (Orig. 372)
7. πηερωμοητ νισογο εκεσοκ εσρα ενεηα νισωπ ετογ-
       ας (Orig. 347)

27.3 A Noun or Personal Pronoun Predicatively Expanded by the Circumstantial (adnexal circumstantial): “(I found) him/the man/a man sitting”. The noun/pronoun is normally an object of a verb or adjoined to another noun by means of η-.

1. αηκαη ηψογ (Ch. 32)
2. καν γαηες εμελος ηπεετ εγογο (III 115)
   [NB: γαηες imperative]
3. τυηναγ ερον εμηνανεμα ηπωτ (RE 10 164)
4. ἄγοαςογ ηγογας (IV 97)
5. νηναγ δη επημηρε ωηη εσληνπνη εηκωτε νηετκιε
       ταχυ (Wess. 9 140)
   [NB: a rhetorical question]
6. νηεετηεην νινσογ εαλλαγ (III 25)
7. αηοητη ερηνη δε ... (III 21)
8. σεπαδιε νηησων ετυηναγ εαγορκη (III 141)
9. ζηηναγ νηεγοηεην ηηπηναγ νηηη αγεηε πεηηη (III 87)
10. νηηε νηεγα εγοβολ ζηαδα με αγη εεεηε ζηαδα ζηςωβ
       νιν (Leyd. 347f.)
11. νηηε νηετογημ- αη νηηρ ζηςωηε ερεηεγηαλαγ τηρογ
       τολη (III 177)
28.1 A CLAUSE EXPANDED BY THE CIRCUMSTANTIAL (modifier or "adverbial" circumstantial): "He came here wishing to speak to me", also resolved in English into "...as/when/while/although he wished...".

NB: the practical difference between the adverbial, adnexal and adnominal roles of the circumstantial is at times tenuous and their distinction difficult.

1. ἀργῶσκε ἰηναι ἐφονω ἐρβολ (III 39)
2. ἤναταμο ᾄσωτ ἐν σφιψε αν (Ch. 103)
3. ἦνδακ διαξοειν ἰδἰν ἰενθνυτη ἐμπειεμε (III 139)
4. οὐκαὶ ἐν πεινετ ἰνεῖστ ἐτσαματ ἐκείρῃ ἰηπέν-

[OBS. The circumstantial Nominal Sentence has typically an adversative meaning: "whereas", "although"]

5. ἰηρωμε εἰγω ἰον ἰεκτανῳ ἐσομηταγες ἰαγω

[OBS. A narrative-continuative use of the circumstantial perfect]

6. ἄτετῆςυνητητα ἰησωτή ἰωκαίνοιο ἐνετῆςγενῃςτητε (III 135)

7. ἀπονυτε ἕαγ ἐπεγικας εαφ ἕαγ ἰηγενῳ (IV 27)

[OBS: A cleft sentence ("It is a single ... that I have")], section 33]

8. ἰπῆςωδεμο ἐροου εἰγητμητε ἰαβαγλων (Ch. 76)

9. ἀγωτ ἐτοοτ εἰχί ἰμοογ ἰδἰν ἰωκταγανος (III 145)

10. ἰγκτωρε ὑνγωτ ἰκας τετεογιταιε εἰργων ἰζητι κοτ

11. ἐκτωκε ἀγω ἐκτατωκε ἰηπεκαλος κατα-

12. ἰπῆςωτητ ἓτοκ ἐροι εἰγω ἰηναι (Ch. 102)

[OBS. This may alternatively be interpreted as an instance of the adnominal circumstantial, predicatively expanding the first person singular object pronoun]

13. ἰπε ἐνταγίεζω σωβε ἐπῆςωβε ἰα ταὶ τε ἐν ἱνταμελεὶ

14. ἰηρωμε εἰργοτε ἰητη ἐπονυτε ἱποειῳ ἰν ἐγκοτ-

[Miss. 282]
28.2 A VERB OF INCOMPLETE PREDICATION ("DESCRIPTIVE VERB") EXPANDED BY THE CIRCUMSTANTIAL (adverbial adverbial circumstantial, "predicative complement"): "He stopped speaking". The circumstantial present is the normal form with most descriptive verbs.

NB: (1) Note especially the use of the verb ὅψε “come into being" “happen, take place" which, followed by the circumstantial as a predicative complement, is used suppletively, to combine various tenses with the durative pattern, Nominal Sentence or existential statements.

(2) The verb ὁγομ means "have already done" when occurring in a main clause conjugation form, “finish doing” when in a dependent-clause form.

1. ἐγεψὲ ἐγγογιρτὶς ὑμενὴς τρόχῳ ... (others) ἐγ-
   ἐς ὁμὲ ἐγογιας ἐβολὰς ὑμενῃς τρόχῳ ἐτής (III 155f.)
2. τὴν ὅψε ἐγγογιας ἠκρίμα τιχων (III 158)
3. Ἡπψε ἐγιατίκας ἴς τιμὴν (A II 61)
4. ὅψε ἐτετητήκων επονούτε (A II 27)
5. ἄνασε ὅψε ἐγγαρῆ νάν ἄγῳ ἐγογιασὶς ἄν (Ch. 93)
6. Ἦπψε ἐκείρε ἤμοκ ἡδικαίος ἡμαρκ (A II 503)
7. Ἡπψε ἐς ἐναμαζόμενοι ἐςραί ἐκσκ (Rossi 2/3 43)
8. ἄνασε ὅγῳ ἐγνοεί ἱνὴν παντοῦ (P 130.4 99 νο)
9. Ἦπψονογογ άκενογ οὔς ἐγανογ ἤμοογ (III 20)
10. ἐγανογογ ἐγνωμένη ἱνημοοντοῦ ἐγνωθή (IV 63)
11. ἐγαναβκ ἐγανογ ἐκείρη ἱνεσβραγτὶς ἣνοογ ἐματε ῥα-
    τοῦγογες ἐγπραμβ ἤμαγ (IV 69)
12. Ἦπψλο ἐκείρε ἱνετγανογογ (Rossi 2/3 71)
13. Ἦπψλο ἐς ἱνεοεῖς ἐροογ (Wess. 9 132)
14. ἐκσκαμβ ἐκείρων πέγενες ἱναμερίκα ἱνημοοντοῦ ἱνηρψμε
    (IV 41)
15. ἱερογογῳς ἐβολα ἐγνωθί (III 138)

28.3 THE CIRCUMSTANTIAL PRECEDING THE MAIN CLAUSE
(premodifier circumstantial): “Even though he could not work, he came
with us”, “As long as you are here, I feel safe”.

1. εἰσμοος γίανογογογ πεκεπεττῷς ἤναι ἀλαγ εγγον (III 44)
   (NB: πεττῳ ἁ- definite relative present: “the one who...")
29. THE CIRCUMSTANTIAL CARRYING ON A RELATIVE OR PRETERITE CONVERSION

1. πηνυκε ετεμηντασσαλαγ ογα ενηναγ αν ελλαγ ηνογον (Rossi 2/3 70)
2. πετογωνα εβολ τηρη γηνηεβηνηε λγω ερεπηεβηνηε τηρογ ογον εβολ ηνητκ (RE 10 161)
3. ηνέννοογτε ετεογιναλ ηνοογ ηνεναγ εβολ αν αγω εγη- 
   μαααε ηνοογ ηνεεωτη αν αγω εγηνταπρ ηνοογ εμεγ- 
   ωκαε (Mun. 107)
4. νεφροφενς ηνογ εηαμεεστωγ εβολ εηιενεηογ ηνε- 
   νροφενς ηαικαυς αγω εαεμεηηογ εβολ εηιενερεεμε 
   ηατεςηω ηγω ηερεβηνε (III 171)
5. πενειωτ ηνεηεααγ εηαηαγην αγω εαεηανηννι (IV 
   129)
6. πενταηακαγ κε εαεηηεηεεε γε εκεηεεηοετε (Wess. 9 113)
7. πρωνε ετκω ηεηηη επνηκεις αγω ερεπηκεις ηαψψ ε 
   καη ηεηεπης (Ch. 161)
8. νεεεψψε κε εηαψψ (A 1 53)
9. νερεπηογτε νανογε ερητη κε ερεζεηηοηνν ηαψψ (III 86)
(*) 30. SOME SPECIAL THEMATIC ROLES OF THE CIRCUM-
STANTIAL

The circumstantial is used as theme (subject) in certain special Cleft
Sentence ("It is... that.../who...") patterns, in which it marginally
overlaps with the relative topic (see section 33). The focus, invariably
initial in this pattern, is either an adverbial or a nominal syntagm.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
*SHISHA-HALEVY, chap. 2, par. 2.5

1. συγρωμε πε πεξακε εονηταχ αναλ γουραχρε αγιω ωηερε,
cατε (III 96)
   [OBS. This is a narrative (here parable) opening role of the Cleft
   Sentence; cf. Lc. 15:11]
2. ετβεπε δω επαπκοεις κεστωογ φεμε νρομπε (III 133)
3. ηαυ νζε τενογ εογοι αν νενεκωκ ννενερην εγραι
   ενιειειε ετεηθαγ ηκακε γιοντι (A II 155)
4. ζαζ μεν ηνγακε εαναυογ αγιω αναλαγογ ετενεπνπο
   ηνπεωθη αγιω τεςνηθνουτε (Cat. 42)
5. ηαυ νζε εοννε ηναν αν ηε (Miss. 278)
6. ουηη νημα αινηκεεια ... ερεειε νημοογ (III 199)
7. ωαντεογ δε ωυεν ενκοβε ηναη ηπκωγη ηντεζενηα
   (Rossi 2/3 43)
   {NB: ωαντεογ ωυεν, followed by the circumstantial, is the
   Coptic idiom corresponding to "Until when...?" (ου "what?")}
(B) THE RELATIVE CONVERSION: ADNOMINAL
(ATTRIBUTIVE)

31.1 The antecedent: definite article, demonstrative pronoun: determinative (definite) relative
31.1.1 The formal antecedent π-: nominalized ("lexemic") relative: "one who"
31.2 Antecedent: definite noun syntagm

32 The relative conversion carried on

33 The Cleft Sentence with relative topic and pronominal/nominal focus
"It is he/the man who (whom) ..."
33.1 The focus: noun syntagm, determinated relative, demonstrative and interrogative pronouns
33.2 The focus: personal pronoun
33.2 The Cleft Sentence converted

ετε- / ετ-, ετε-, ετερε- / ετη-, ἦτ- / ἦ- + clause: Table G

The relative conversion marks an adnominal attributive status of the clause (e.g., marks the clause as expanding and describing a noun or pronoun): it always follows its antecedent (= expanded noun/pronoun, nucleus).

NB: (1) the relative does not occur after indefinite or zero determination.
(2) The two basic constructions of the relative verb clause are:
(a) antecedent + relative (actor of verb = antecedent: "the man who heard", "the man who will come"); the antecedent is resumed only where the conjugation pattern has an obligatory actor expression, i.e. the base-conjugation and adjective verbs.
(b) antecedent + relative + resumption of antecedent (actor of verb not = antecedent: "the man whom I heard", "the man to whom I will come", lit. "... who I heard him", "... who I will come to him").

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 400, 401-405, 409, 411, 414, 417, 419, 424, 426-427, 428-429, 432-434, 436, 438-439; Stein dorff parr. 454-455, 459-482; Till parr. 461-474, 476-
31.1 THE ANTECEDENT: DEFINITE ARTICLE, DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUN (definite determinated relative)

η-ετ- (etc.) "he who . . .", τ-ετ- (etc.) "she who . . .", η-ετ- (etc.) "they who": The definite relative form functions to all main purposes as a definite noun syntagm or proper names (sections 1-4). There is no restriction of tense or predicate; the def. article varies freely: masculine, feminine or plural; the whole expresses either a specific or a generic substantival relative clause.

Note the three main constructions:

(a) ARTICLE + RELATIVE ("the one that is listening": antecedent = actor), with the actor not expressed in the conjugation form (e.g. affirmative durative present);

(b) ARTICLE + RELATIVE + RESUMPTIVE PRONOUN ("the one that listened", "he who had", "he who is not listening" "that which is good": antecedent = actor) where the actor is expressed in the converted conjugation form (e.g. tense-base conjugation, negated durative present and future (ετε-νη... εμ) existential possession, suffixed-actor forms such as the Adjective Verbs);

(c) ARTICLE + RELATIVE . . . + RESUMPTIVE PRONOUN (antecedent not = actor: "he whom I am listening to", "he whom I saw", "that which he has", "he whose house I shall see", "he about whom they say . . .").

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

Stern parr. 246, 404; Stein Dorff parr. 476-477; Till parr. 476-481; Vergote parr. 125, 168; Lambdin par. 3.1, 27.2; * Polotsky, Nom. Transposition parr. 51-57, 61-62; Quecke "Relativsatz"; Shisha-Halevy p. 114

1. πενταπογείνει απογείνει (III 222)
2. πενταπογείνει κισταρχή ἔπεωντ ἔνετηναδαυ γήτεςγυνηγεία ἔπαισιν (P 130.2 85 νο)
3. πετεσσογ τετλαιε (Ch. 78)
4. πετεφαγ (IV 113)
5. πετεφίνενθ (III 108)
6. πεταγιαδευε γήνεγραφη σεεογν ἔπισωλ ἔνεισακε (Wess. 9 151)
7. πετεσγυνηθεία πε ἀπογείναι (Ch. 37)
8. πετενογ ιπε πετεναογ νη (A 1 236)
9. πετενωψι πε πετενωψι άν απ (Ch. 77)
10. πετενων πετενών διν ην όλα λαπερρα πεξε ναι (III 69)
11. πετενερεοιης ην ἰπνουτε (Ch. 78)
12. πετεσαραντεμε ήπνουτε μήπεςξε ξιούγ θυρο (Wess. 9 148)
13. ζκογορ ηνιπετουχε ερος ξεογειωτ πε μητετογκει
ερος ξεογμαμ τε εγκωαντι-πεγκοτομ μαγας (IV 153)
14. τι πονιετε αγω πινηρε ήπνουτε πετενληγτε εταλκ
ζαςεμνενε (IV 42)
15. πετουγαλωγονι (P 130.5 111 90)
16. σεταγο απεπενεεσουης ην ιεινωφυνε (P 130.4 97 90)
17. μεντακσιολ ερον ηητου (Ch. 94)
18. νεθοομο μινηνανογομ (IV 35)
19. μηνεουηταγοεικ (Ch. 120)
20. παι ετημιαη μητατεμετηκη (Jcl.)
21. ζτοου ιακαββατον τηρομπε ναι ενταπεκειωτ ιαγι και
περα (IV 120)
{NB: τηρομπε σερρομπνε}
22. υπακε, ιητοσία απο απονουτε ετηγκικ ται ετερεδακιαο-
ζυμη νηυ εβοι ιηητικ (III 14)
23. (Can I hide) πρι ηητιο μηπουος μηπεκιογ ναι ετηκιεμε
γαι (Ch. 43)
24. πιμ πε λαι ετερεπεκεμ υηκε ετηγκικη (Ch. 135)
25. μετεμπεπετο ιξοεις εροομο ημαι ηιπανουτε (A 1 164)

31.1.1 THE FORMAL ANTECEDENT π-: THE LEXEMIC NOMINATED RELATIVE

πετ- “one who…”

The nominalized relative functions as a lexeme-equivalent zero-determined noun, and is preceded by any of the determinators (section 1). Both tense (present only: durative and Adjective Verbs) and predicate (mostly quality: stative and Adjective Verb) are restricted. The element π- is in this case not the definite article: πετ- is the invariable form.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

Stern Parr. 246, 404; Steindorff Parr. 478; Till Parr. 480-481; Vergote Parr. 125, 168; Lambdin Parr. 3.1, 27.2; * PoIotsky, Nom. Transposition Parr. 74-79; Quecke "Relativsatz"; * Shisha-Halevy p. 114
31.2 THE ANTECEDENT: DEFINITE NOUN SYNTAGM

DEFINITE DETERMINATOR + [noun lexeme] + RELATIVE CONVERSION

Note the three main constructions:
(a) ARTICLE + RELATIVE ("the one that is listening": antecedent = actor), with the actor not expressed in the conjugation form (e.g. affirmative durative present)
(b) ARTICLE + RELATIVE + RESUMPTIVE PRONOUN ("the one that listened", "he who had", “he who is not listening” “that which is good”: antecedent = actor) where the actor is expressed in the converted conjugation form (e.g. tense-base conjugation, negated durative present and future (ἐτε-νῇ- ... ἄν) existential possession, suffixed-actor forms such as the Adjective Verbs)
(c) ARTICLE + RELATIVE... + RESUMPTIVE PRONOUN (antecedent not = actor: “he whom I am listening to”, “he whom I saw”, “that which he has”, “he whose house I shall see”, “he about whom they say ...”)

NB: (1) the resumption is by means of a 3rd person pronoun ("he", "she" “they”) unless the relative expression is addressed ("vocative"), when a 2nd person resumption ("you" masc./fem./plural) is idiomatic.
(2) The resumptive pronoun is normally absent when the antecedent is a time-expression or place-expression noun (“the time when ...”, “the place where ...”). For place expressions, ἙΜΑΥ "there" and ἘΜΑΥ "thither" serve as resumption of the antecedent.
1. τοργὴ εντασσεῖ εξων ἐβολὴ γιτῆπενταχθημενήπθηρη πνοῦτε οἰδῆβομ (III 222)
2. πμα ετηθανόου εναγ (III 173)
3. πεντῆθε εφαγμονή εφαγμονομή (RE II 15)
4. τακάθαρτος ἴσωναγωγὴν ετήθαγ (Ch. 123)
5. νανογνωσάμεν ἦτανχοος νανογνωσηνεπροφυτὸς ἀει ἐξωγον ὁν κοογ (P 131.6 73 νο)
6. τειγγην εντασσατανας ἂς ἵβληκη ἀειρὴρψμε (III 210)
7. ἄω ἐν πκαλρους ετενδαρπαγαθὸς ἴθήτῃ (IV 179)
8. ὦ ἔρυμε ετερεφίμη ἀπειλή ἔρστῳ ἄσεβολ ἔνογττων (Ch. 47)
9. πειεσνοὸι ἠμίν ἠμοι ετογαα (Ch. 175)
10. μπαδοες ετοχγ (Ch. 163)
11. πενινθ ἐτο ἴκακε ἔνογεμ (Wess. 9 173)
12. ἄων ἵμεν ετευφε ἐεαγ (IV 43)
   (NB: the resumption here is in the object of the infinitive)
13. ἁνε ἠνεγκώοες ετεμπίγσω ἐρο ἐξετεοϑοο ἐνεμίσαλ ἰμενες (Ch. 189)
14. μεσονις ἵμεν ἔρυμε ετεμπογούννοσντε (Ch. 180)
15. ἁνε ετογαμβ ἁνε ἠταγχοος (Ch. 49)
   (NB: ετογαμβ = ετ-ογ-ογαμβ (3rd person plural actor))
16. κενα Ἰκ ἴπνευικ ετεπαι πε πνοομος ἤπνογυτε (Ch. 127)
   [OBS. ετεπαι πε “namely”, “that is to say”]
17. ἀνοννῳφερ ἔνογρωμε ἔνογώτ ετεποσντε πε ἄων ἀνονν-<wbr/><LR/><wbr/>ῳφερ ἔνογμαλ ἔνογώτ ετεβιλμή ἴπτε πε (IV 129)
   [OBS. ετε-... πε occurs after definite or indefinite antecedents in the sense “that is...”, “namely”]
18. ἄηςογ ετεκοογ ἦ ετετεκοογ ἔξωθαίς ἔξωθαίς (III 21)
   (NB: ετεκοογ 2nd sgl. fem. actor of the present)
   [OBS. The absence of resumption is typical of time-expression and place-expression antecedents, in adverbial relation with the verb expanding them; so also the next text. However, in texts 7 and 11 we find full resumption of time antecedents]
19. ταρκὴ ἠταγχοντι ἱμπρωμε (IV 34)
   (NB: ταρκὴ used as a time-expression)
20. μέπνεωογ εἴη (A I 451)
   (NB: a nominalized relative with the possessive article serves as antecedent of another relative conversion)
21. πμα εντατεκοογ πν ἱεμε νε κιμ ἐτεγανε εξω ἱμαγ ἔνογπτσοντι μνογοτρι (A I 78) —
(NB: a “chinese box” construction: ημαυ resumes ημα (the external relative), πε resumes π- in πετεκοων; πετεκοων 2nd sgl. fem. actor; εξω preposition, 2nd sgl fem. form)

32 THE RELATIVE CONVERSION CARRIED ON

Constructions:
(a) DEFINITE RELATIVE - άγω/ή - DEFINITE (or undetermined) RELATIVE (all conjugation forms)
(b) RELATIVE - (άγω/ή) - RELATIVE (all conjugation forms)
(c) RELATIVE - (άγω/ή) - CIRCUMSTANTIAL (all conjugation forms)
(d) RELATIVE - (άγω/ή/θ) - UNCONVERTED CONJUGATION FORM (only perfect)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Steindorff par. 475; Till par. 482-486

1. πετρης άγω ετροεις (III 74)
2. πεταματαμπούν άγω πεταματαμπούν άνα ίτο (III 68)
3. τακτος ετογειρε ημος η ετογνας (IV 48f.)
   [OBS. This is an example of the well known “tautological” figura Sinuthiana in which a lexeme is repeated in a more or less different grammatical characterization]
4. πεταματαμπούν ενηβας άγω εαυταγουσταλιον ερακοτε (Ch. 108)
5. πινομ ημηιεκε ιταεικε ενταγολε ερον η εαυγοωζ ζημια ιπρο (III 69)
6. πεταματαμπούν ενηβας (III 41)
7. ηνεικ ενταμεμον εροον ηταγοων αγειε εβολ ιντογ (Ch. 158)
8. πεταματαμπούν ενηβας εχωου (Ch. 29)
9. πεταματαμπούν άγω ετταγε ζημπεζου (IV 180)
10. πεταματαμπούν άγω ετταγε ζημπεζου (IV 47)
11. πεταματαμπούν άγω ετταγοω (Ch. 194)

33. THE CLEFT SENTENCE WITH NOMINAL/PRONOMINAL FOCUS AND RELATIVE TOPIC: “It is I who speak to you”, “It is God who will provide”, “It was not John whom I saw” — a construction used to put a noun or pronoun in focus with a complete verb clause as its topic.
Constructions:
(33.1) (a) ≠ NOUN (focus) + π-/τ-/ν- — RELATIVE (topic; the form of the topic in agreement with the gender of the focus) ≠
(33.2) (b₁) ≠ PERSONAL PRONOUN (focus) + π- RELATIVE ≠ (topic invariable; all forms)
(b₂) ≠ PERSONAL PRONOUN (focus) + π- RELATIVE ≠ (topic invariable; all forms)
(b₃) ≠ PERSONAL PRONOUN (focus) + π-/τ-/ν- — RELATIVE ≠
(topic in agreement with the gender of the pronominal focus)

Negatived: ≠ (N) FOCUS an Topic ≠

NB: of the two main constituents of this pattern, the first (noun or pronoun) is always the focus (marked predicate), the second the topic (verbal logical subject).

Bibliography:

33.1 THE FOCUS: PROPER NAME, NOUN SYNTAGM or DETERMINATED RELATIVE, DEMONSTRATIVE, INDEFINITE or INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS

1. ἁρκοῦν ἵτο τῇ-πλαγείας ἄρο (Orig. 432)
2. Ἰμαναχος νεμνη ἐρνχεια (Ch. 102)
3. πνοτεταγμεγυσαν (III 47)
4. οὐσιον ἵας ἰαζεντετεταχων (III 37)
5. πουεεν νεκαχαν ἓμαγ ἒπκακε νῆλας ἰεν ἓπετενα-γωοσ αἱ (P 131.4 157 το)
6. πεκσταγος σενταχικ επκας τηρή (RE 10 163)
7. ἰπρωισ αἱ σέντόκτο ἰμος (i.e. the sword) (IV 12)
8. πετεπρωμε γαρ ἁξυοαον και ἐν πετεναοςαοι (BKE 180.2)
9. και ἐν νε ετεχω προος ἦροος αῃ ... (III 53)
   {NB: νε ετ- a variant of ητ-?}
10. οὐ γαρ κατακε απετεπηπνογε ταυ τητι (Ch. 97)
11. οὐ πετοοοπ χενοντα αἱ νε (Ch. 97)
12. και πεταχατα τητιναε-τῆς κατακες ιεροος (Ch. 156)
13. οὐ νακοβαλος σεντατι, οὐβεκ ινιενεκτανεν σεντα-γει επογει ἄρο (IV 75)
14. πεταγωγή πενταγωγή (Cat. 42)
   [OBS. The focus here is a definite det. relative; similarly in text 15.
   In text 8, a det. relative is extrapolated to the Cleft Sentence]
15. πεταγωγή άν πεταγωγή ερωτή ἀλλα πεξ好转 πεταγωγή ερωτή (Leyd. 333)
16. σινογένεσε πεξ好转 σινογένεσε πεξ好转 ηπερνεμείτι ηειωτ
   νεοφιλετάτος γην ἤμακαρικωτάτος ἀπα τιμοθεος
   (Mun. 95)
17. ἡνογούτε πεταγωγή (III 21)
   [OBS. In texts 17-20 we find the Cleft Sentence (with a Proper
   Name as focus) in the role of a letter-opening self-identification and
   narrative-opening construction]
18. ογρφο πενταγωγή εκειτ ηογολος η ουνη ηνεκματοι
   (A II 462)
19. ογρφομεν πεταγωγή ημαι ηφωρε εναι (Ch. 103; cf. Lc.
   15:11)
20. ωομεντε ηπομονην ηπομονην εγαξη ζητηκη ληκεγερνγνω (III 27)
21. γενμογον ηνηαγωγωπε ηνητε (Young 3)

33.2 THE FOCUS: PERSONAL PRONOUN

1. ἢτωτη ετεογον (III 24)
2. ἡτοκ ετεσον ἡτοκ ετεστο (III 104)
3. ἀνον πεταννη νουνι εμοοντόν (Ch. 70)
4. εντο ἀν πενταννηον νονε νει ει εβολ ζητοτε (P
   130.2 67 178)
   {NB: εντο = ἢτο}
5. ἢτωτη γαρ πεταννηοτε ἄσω νμον ερωτή θε... (III 48)
   [OBS. contrast the allocutive (2nd-person) resumption in texts 4, 5,
   9 with the delocutive resumption of a 2nd-person focus in 8]}
6. πεταννηομον νουηεξεν ἢτοογο νετανγνω ην νουηεξε (IV 4)
7. ἢτωτη νετεπηνετύγαν εκασω εβολ νμογον νικηντφη
   ἄσω νπεεγκνον νουι εβολ (A II 107)
8. ἢτοκ πεντακριβηημεριτή (RE 10 162)
9. ἢτοογο ετρουςε (IV 98)
10. ενεητοογον πεταναγανον επνογοτε ανανον πενταναγανον
    ἐνοο (III 38)
    {NB: ene-: interrogation mark}
11. ἢτοογο νητανον νουηαον νογον ἢτοο (Ch. 156)
12. επνογοτε ἢτοκ ετνακοτη κτανον (IV 74)
13. ἢτοον πεταννηον τον εβωκ εκαςα εναητε (A I 193)
33.3 THE CLEFT SENTENCE CONVERTED: circumstantial (ε-), preterite (νε-)

1. ἀγαθῷ ὁν ἐτεχνᾶς τετράγωνον ἵππον (III 87)
2. Ἁνεγερτήσας ἱππαρχοὺς οὐ σωματεῖον ἱπποτῶν ἱππεῖαι αὐτοῖς εἷς-
    ὕλος ἐπὶ πενταγωνίῳ ὕπαι (IV 113)
3. (Hec saying:) ἦτοι πενταπερίκτη εβολ ἤξινδ τῆς λήμνης ἱππο-
    τέρων ἐπὶ πενταπερίκτη ἔπολ (III 141f.)
4. (There being four Gospels only) εἱλαὶ πετρογοιεῖν ἐφικομοῦν
    τῆς (Wess. 9 143)
5. ἐνεογγυγεῖν ἀν ἰὼν τετράγωνον ἰππαρχοῦ εὐναβοῦ ἐπὶ πεῖ ἅν ...
    (III 220)
    {NB: ενε-... ἰγμα-... hypothetical (remote) condition and
    result: section 41, circumstantial preterite conversion of the Cleft
    Sentence}
6. νεοῦ πετρών (Orig. 334)
7. ἴγνωστο εἰπεγάζε πενταπερίκτη εβολ (A I 43)
8. νεοῦ ὁν ἐτεχνᾶς πενταπερίκτη ἱπποτῆς ἱππεῖαι νεπταμοῦ ἱππο-
    τέρων ἱππαρχοῦ ... (A I 232)
(C) THE "SECOND TENSE" CONVERSION: THE FOCUSSING MARK

34.1 Cleft Sentence with initial Second Tense topic, non-interrogative adverbial focus: επερατῇ ἦν εἰμια "It is here that he stands"
34.2 Cleft Sentence with initial Second Tense topic, interrogative adverbial focus: επερατῇ ἦν εἰμια εσπεογ "Why is it that he stands here?"

35 Cleft Sentence with initial (mostly interrogative) adverbial focus: εσπεογ εκχω ἡμος "Why do you say it?" ("Why is it that ...")

36 Cleft Sentence with interrogative or non-interrogative nominal/pronominal focus, Second Tense topic: εκχεογ "What do you say?", ἢταιογ ωπε "What happened?" ("What is it that ...")

37 Cleft Sentence: the Second Tense (Second Present) focussing its own predicate adverb: εκτων "Where is he?" ("Where is it that ...")

38 Cleft Sentence: the Second Tense focussing its own lexeme: εκαοβε "You are crazy!". The Second Tense in rhetorical questions.

ε- / ἡτ-, εντ-/ετε- + conjugation form: Table G

The Second Tense conversion marks the conjugation form in the following ways:
(a) (in the presence of other elements than the verb) as of lower predicativity than other, non-verbal clause constituents, thereby putting the latter into focus (focussing or emphasizing them); the English equivalent would be a Cleft Sentence ("It is ... that..."); French "C'est ... que..."), with the Second Tense its "that..." component;
(b) (where only the conjugation form is the pertinent unit) as emphasizing or underlining its own adverbial verbal or predicate: "He did go (indeed)", "You are (truly) crazy", "Will I sin?" (rhetorical), "There he is".
BIBLIOGRAPHY:
TILL par. 303; VERCOTE par. 163; LAMBDIN parr. 14.1-2, 24.1-2, 25.1, 28.1-2; POLOTSKY, Études pp. 20-68; “Conjugation System” parr. 11, 30-32; *Nom. Transposition, parr. 121-136; *SHISHA-HALEVY, Chapter 2

34.1 The Cleft Sentence with an INITIAL SECOND TENSE TOPIC followed by a NON-INTERROGATIVE ADVERBIAL FOCUS: "It is there that he sat"

# SECOND TENSE + ADVERB # (see Table G)

Cleft Sentence Negated: # (ν-) Second Tense an adverb #

NB: As “adverb” here count all lexical adverbs, prepositional phrases, dependent clause conjugation forms (7.1-7.3), circumstantial conversion (28), final clauses (αε- or αεκαλε with the Optative or Second Future, 6.4, 17.2).

1. πειρωσ οταν τεροή γίνεστο επηπ (IV 198)
2. πετναογωσ ερογοτ ιογαρακων εφαραγτη ετεπαε (Ch. 73)
3. πετογωσ εσωτη 干事εσωτη γιων οταςωτη ναρ Μαγ-λαα (III 165)
4. τε γωον νιμιλαν εν εψαισον εν εψαιον γίνεγλα (IV 24)
5. πεγλογτε δε τε το αλλα εγο νιθαλα Μπαμκανεεε (Ch. 109f.)
6. ειςαε εροι νιμιλλα (III 184)
   {NB: νιμιλτα adds “you” (pl.) to the 1st sgl. in εροι}
7. μεσαοε εφασοε ετεμεγαταςις ιαγαμον (IV 4)
8. εψαισογιλε-ογδο ερον εφαιταγε γίνετκα εαρ αρ Νηπτοε (III 85)
9. μεταλ γαρ εγνα εξεχαμα ναε (Ch. 98)
   {NB: the final (purpose) clause is here put in focus}
10. Μαν δε ειςω νιοοκ ειταειο αε νιοοι μαγαε εαλα ειταεμο Μηςωτε (III 35)
    {NB: two circumstantial present forms are here in focus; the negator negatives the Cleft Sentence, not the circumstantial: “It is not..., but... that...”}
11. εψαιγκαηε πιαε ερδαηνοδεις ει εγραι (IV 20)
    {NB: the conditional is here in focus}
TOPICS OF ADVANCED SYNTAX

[OBS. The sense "as soon as..." or "no sooner... than..." is idiomatically conveyed by the combination of a Second Tense with a circumstantial or conditional]

12. ῥαπαλκεῖος ἢσβ ἐπίστροφο ἀν ἡπινοῦσει ἑβερεννηθὰ ἡμᾶς ἄλλα ἑβερκεσίων (III 78)
   [OBS. Of two (or more) non-interrogative adverbial adjuncts, it is usually the last that is put in focus by the Second Tense]

13. ἤνὲγκοσμεὶ ἀν ἡγενκοούσε ἄλλα εγκοσμε ἢμοου ἡμᾶς (IV 51)
   {NB: ἤνεγ-... ἀν is a frequent form of the negated Second Present construction}

14. ἡτακογώνει γὰρ ἀν ἡπεῖρε ἄλλα ἡσούν ἢμο ἡχηνωρή (III 21)

15. ἡταγγ-ναγ- νιστ γαρ ἀν ἡεξετομεῖ οἰκ ἡμπκατ (Leyd. 311)
   {NB: ἡ constitutes a compound verb with ἡα-, which governs here an immediate direct object (πτατ)}

16. μὴ ἐσπαρενματοι ἀν ἵπο ἐνεφχαξε ἡγεσιγοτεβεγ ἢμισε (III 200)

17. μὴ ἦνευσυ ἀν ἡνιγραφή ἢνοϊκτ ἔπειμυστηρίων ἀν ἢνοϊκτ
   πετικε ἐβολ ἠντί (III 221)
   [OBS. Note the combination of two complementary focussing patterns: a Second Tense construction with a Cleft Sentence with nominal focus]

34.2 The Cleft Sentence with an INITIAL SECOND TENSE TOPIC followed by an INTERROGATIVE ADVERBIAL FOCUS: "Where is it that he sat?"

# SECOND TENSE + ADVERB # (see Table G)

NB: the focus here is an interrogative adverbial, mostly a prepositional phrase containing an interrogative pronoun: "why?" "where?", "whither?" "in what way?", "how much? (adv.)", "in which house?"

1. ἐστενάβωκ ἐστὼ (III 74)
2. ἐπεσοτῆ ἢτο ἐσι (P 130.2 6 87)
3. ἐσμην ἐπογ (IV 94)
   {NB: here the adverb in focus is an infinitive (ἠ-; see ἐπι), attached with ἐ- as adjunct ("in order to..."); with the interrr. pronoun as direct object)
35 The Cleft Sentence with an INITIAL (interrogative or non-interrogative) ADVERBIAL FOCUS followed by a SECOND TENSE TOPIC: “Why is it that he sits here?”, “That is why he said this”

# ADVERB + SECOND TENSE # (Table G)

Cleft Sentence negated: # adverb an + Second Tense #

NB: As “adverb” here count some lexical adverbs non-interrogative prepositional phrases, dependent clause conjunction forms (7.1-7.3), circumstantial conversion (28) and very characteristically two interrogative prepositional phrases: ἃνω ἢς “how?” and ἐπε-ογ “why?”

Bibliography:
* Shisha-Halevy, par. 2.4

1. ἐπε-ογ ἐκκαθιστᾶν ἰδιογε ὑπὸ ὑπὸ ἄνω ὑπὸ ἄνω ἐπε-ταχεῖς (Or. 153)
2. ἃνω ἢς εὐγεγομένος ἀν (A II 337)
3. ὃς ἑπε-εἶν ἐν ἑπε-αὐτῷ ἄν (A I 113)
4. ἃνω ἃνω ἢς ἐπε-ογ εἰρήτη μαρογή ἀν ὀντοπός ἄνω ἐπε-ογ (A II 8f.)
5. καθε ἢς ἐπε-εὐγεγομένος (III 46)
6. ἐπε-εἶν ἱπαχοῦσα Ἰ ἵππα ἱπαχοῦσα ἱπαχοῦσα ἱπαχοῦσα (Wess. 9 144, 152)
7. ἐπε-εἶν ἵππα ἵππα ἵππα ἵππα ἵππα (Wess. 9 131)
8. ἥναι ὁν εὔτιμ ἑίνεγβαλ (Wess. 9 128)
9. εὐνοοτε ἡμωτῖν ἂν εὔχω ἥνϊν ἥναι (Wess. 9 158)
   {NB: ἃν negates the preposed circumstantial focus: “It is not hating
   you that…”; sim. in text 12 (conditional focus)}
10. γραῖ ἡμῆς ἐγνατήσαν εὐογὸν ἕμ ἑκερπίν ἤγογὸν ἕμ
    εὐολ γίτοοτέ (IV 17)
11. εὐθελεὶ ἡταπείνοσ ἔκαςο γι ἐγραῖ εὐηθεἰςθεμῖν
    (Mun. 96)
12. ἐργανθεῖσορ ἀσκακ εὐολ ἁν … ἐρεπογι τῇρε (Ch. 38)
13. ἰη εὐθελανοβε ἂν ἡτακματίγοι γίγοι (A I 81)

36 Cleft Sentence with (mostly interrogative) NOMINAL or PRO-
NOMINAL FOCUS and SECOND TENSE TOPIC: “What is it you
say?”, “What is it that has happened?”
The focus occupies here the normal place of the non-focal actor or
object. The actor following the conjugation base in the base conjugation,
the Second Tense converter in the durative pattern, the object following
the infinitive.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
*Shisha-Halevy, pgr. 2.3

1. ἡτοκ γῶσκ ἐκογῳνοβε ἀγω ὅρῃε ἂν (A II 509)
   {NB: ογῳν orthographic variant of the construct ὅγῳ-}
2. εὐθαλεῖσεογῳσάκε ἡταςεῖεπςοογοῦ ἕμογ (Wess. 9 171)
3. ἐρεφογυνε ναρογ ἂν εὐθανῃοβε (Ch. 71)
4. εἰνατὶάε- ἂγ ἢμελος ἡτακασ η εἰναρᾶψ ἢμελος
   ἡταλαπωρος ἡτακαριζε ἱγγ (A II 512)
   {NB: ἡτα- 1st sgl. of the conjunctive (42.1): “and …”}
5. εἰναχεὐγὴς τένογ (A II 510)
6. ἡταπῆ Ἴγου ἱππασλον (A II 150)
7. ἡτεὗχεογοῦ ἂν ἰεεὔχεογ (P 130.2 111 ϊο)
8. εἰναογευσογ (Ch. 105)
9. ἐρεφεμα ἢαν ἐρεφεμανηγοη ἐρογ (P 131.5 4 νο)
10. ἓταν ἢμως ενεг κανεεογ γεπογε ἀγῳ τουαρε
    γῆπτρεγμογ (A II 18)
37. THE SECOND TENSE PUTTING IN FOCUS ITS OWN ADVERBIAL PREDICATE: “Where is it that he is?”

For adverbs which occur also as predicates in the present pattern (section 19), this construction differs in the degree of focality: the Second Tense marks the adverb as higher on the scale of focality (“there he is” as contrasted with “he is there”). Others, notably των “where?”, occur only in the Second Tense conversion.

NB: εὑτων “where is he?” is special in that a nominal theme, if postposed, is immediately adjoined to it and, unlike all other conjugation forms, is not introduced by ἦνι-.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Polotsky, “Conjugation System”, par. 30; *Nominale Transposition* par. 122; *Shisha-Halevy* par. 2.1.1

1. εὑτων πεισών τὴν θλαγήν ποιήσεις ἱ πον (Leyd. 410)
2. εὐτων τενπλανὴ ἑπτενηντωάτες ἡ εὐτων πενδόλ ἑπτενηντινούχα ἑπτενευποκριτικά (Leyd. 316)
3. εὐκκωμεν ἐρνοβε ἔγω ἐτείειπε (Ch. 65)
4. ερειογκάς ὄον των τενοὺ εὐρίνιμτε (A II 53)
5. ἤν εἰςεντείεκκανείαν ἣν ἄγωτ τῶν ἔργων ἐγὼ τείσχυναργὼν ἄγωτ (III 220f.)
6. πνεα εὐτετευελείτ ἵμαρ εὐμᾶγ ἔμπισμι ἔμπενμυμφιοις ἕμενεν-
   νῆμα (Ch. 138)
7. ερεπρωνε ἤτοοτε (IV 12)

38 THE SECOND TENSE PUTTING IN FOCUS ITS OWN PREDICATE VERB: “You are crazy”, “He (does) sin”

Note especially:
(a) the use of the Second Tense in rhetorical questions;
(b) the antithetic Second Tense (second member of antithetic figures);
(c) the use of the Second Future as a jussive, instruction form (“let him hear!”) or 3rd-person imperative

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
*Shisha-Halevy*, par. 2.1.2-2.1.7

1. ἤμπεναιακιος οὐς ἄλλα εὐκκοτα (Ch. 207; cf. Lc. 8:52)
2. ἀντρεγνωρεπ ἤπειενθό ... ἔταγωσε ἔνοικ ἐνοφ ἄγω ἀγετεο (IV 157)
(NB: πωρέκ = πωρᾶ)
3. εἰσόασθος μὴ εἰρήνουε (K 926)
4. εγγανογὼν εὐτυμέν ἄτευμογοῦ ἐγναψαλα (IV 63)
5. ἐρεπειση ἁμείςγαςγάς ηαηπογαλαε ετρεγκραγτῆ
ζωγν νταλ ὑγοπ γημεγή (IV 50)
6. οὖμ θε ἦν ετησεί ἐγοῦν ὃρον εἰμονακο εἰτε
ζωοῦτ εἰτε σήμε εγναπτοτακε ἁςοργ ὑγαα θυμ
ἐτεονἰτογογ (IV 71)
7. ερεπνογεμε νάτακο ὑταψαλ (III 20)
8. (Ενε νεός τον) ἑβάλ αὐτ ἀν ξεεμπρότε ἐν ἑψυτ (A I 131 )
9. μὴ εγναγογαβεβυς εὗρα ΕΡΟΙ ἘΓΝΑΣΤ ὑγκα (Ch. 70)
10. μὴ εὐγκαναμαζε ὑμάγ ἐκη (BM Cat. 94)
(D) THE PRETERITE CONVERSION: THE OFF-PLANE/OFF-
PACE PROJECTING MARK

39 In NARRATIVE
39.1 Narrative detailed ("slow motion") description: progressive view
of action, recurring action, state, circumstance: THE IMPERFECT.
Projection onto the historical plane.
39.1.1 Converted imperfect in narrative: the Imperfect in adnominal
status
39.2 Framing action in narrative: verbs of saying, perceiving, feeling
39.3 Background, anteriority in narrative. Narrator's interposition:
interpretation, background information or personal-attitudinal paren-
thesis

40 The Imperfect in DIALOGUE OR EXPOSITION: Past state, habit, durative
action.

41 The Preterite converter expressing REMOTENESS FROM REALITY OR
HYPOTHETICALITY
41.1 The remote condition ("irrealis" protasis): CIRCUMSTANTIAL
PRETERITE
41.2 Remote wish: ἐγὼ οὐδέποτε
41.3 Remote consequence: PAST FUTURE, IMPERFECT, PAST NOMINAL
SENTENCE


nej- + clause: Table G

An off-plane, off-pace projecting mark, the preterite converter indicates
a deviation in time, pace ("tempo") or actuality from a mainstream
frame of reference. In narrative, this means a change in narrative pace
 esp. from historical narration to description or detail-rich recounting)
or in time perspective (background, anteriority) or in both. In dialogue
or exposition, this "gear shift" expresses past state or habit, or speaker's
past perspective.
A second important function of the preterite converter is to convey
remote hypotheticality, notably in remote hypothetical condition and
result ("irrealis"), also in remote wish.

NB: The morph πέ following the preterite form seems to mark its
backgrounding role.
39. THE PRETERITE CONVERSION IN NARRATIVE

39.1 NARRATIVE DETAILED DESCRIPTION ("slow motion"): a progressive view of action, recurring action, state, circumstance: the Imperfect. Projection onto the plane of "history".

NB: note the frequent combination of the Imperfect with the perfect, with the characteristic predication of state (statives and adverbs) in the former vs. act (infinitives) in the latter conjugation form.

1. ἀρρη εγώσωμε ἢδιννοο ἱνωρε αγγ νεκκηκατε εματε
   αγγ νεκκηναγενε ευψην εζωγη επησον εςογεωμων
   (Mun. 96)

2. ἄτον μακητποο μεκκηβηλικ τπανος ʔբեʔεʔοοο ʔταγι
   ʔηιξηιξμε τηρου ʔηιπηι ʔπιατηνουηε (III 32)
   (NB: τπανος = Panopolis ("Pan's city", Akhmim in upper Egypt))

3. και γαρ αυτηνηγοοεις αγνωτ οτοοτ εειξη ʔηιοοο νονεν
   ʔςοηςγραννος αγσωκ επηα ετεγναη ανοκ δε οετι
   ʔπαξκεοεις ας πε ετρανωτ οτοοτου ʔκεςτι ʔηιοι νονεν
   (III 145)

4. αφιενε ʔηνεκητο εβολ... οτοο δε λεκκωβε η εκραςηε
   εςογουτ ʔηματε (A 153)

5. λενεκητελενες δε τηρου ʔηιερεηφονε βης εζωγη εροη
   (A 1265)

6. νεφαδε νε νηενκοονε εκασηοο νεκκααξαγ πε αγγ
   νεκκααξοο ενογοη επηεε ΰηελανε ετηηαγ αγγ
   νενεκηςεπιεε ʔηιοοο πε (III 149)

7. (They drank from the rock) τπετρα νεκκοοη ʔηςοοο
   (A 11 465f.; cf. I Cor. 10:4)

8. πεκκαη ον ετεκηςηριον ετηηαγ ʔηποηηρον ʔηεκαωηηε
   αγγ νεκκααξηε ετεγναη ʔε-ςεκαβι-ςγεα (A 1170)
   (NB: ιε- (usually ιεηε- i.e. ιε-ιε-) "whether")

9. απαραη νομηοο ιεκιηταη εή λαλε νεκκηςκεεπιγοηει
   ον εηι ʔηιεκαωηηε εβολ ʔηεκεπηαζε (Ch. 38)
39.1.1 CONVERTED IMPERFECT IN NARRATIVE: THE IMPERFECT IN ADNOMINAL STATUS

Circumstantial or relative Imperfect, predicking a stative or an adverb (i.e. state)

NB: following a definite time-expressing noun, the form ene- is ambiguous: it merges circumstantial and relative conversions (Table G, and 27.2)

1. ἁπεογοιειής τηρᾶ ενεγυλων γιαμπικας (A II 539)
2. πτως ενειγήθη<(III I17)> (IV 95)
3. ἦς ενεκο ημοις ζητηκτης ηπατικει ερωγή ενειτοπος (IV 95)
   [OBS. -6 ημοι-: this is the pronominal form of -ο η (“being in a state of”), with the pronoun resuming the antecedent εε “the manner”; the whole would correspond to English “as you were”]
4. ηπις εμεγαζης (Ch. 83)
5. πειλ ετηπρας ηπις ηπειειωτ ηςαλλα απα νποι πμα ενεγυλων ενητις (IV 120)
6. τεψυξε ετηνεκο ηατκαρπος ηνογοιει ηενου ηε λακαι ζηνεπρας ηαγαπον (IV 186)
   {NB: ετηνεκ- = etenecc-, enec-}
7. ηκητει ηειαυητ ηδηπολις ενεψηρητου ηεηνεκτακο ηεη- 
   ηπις ηηαολης ηιηομομορρα (Mun. 98)
8. πεντακταμεπηπηε ρολ ζηπετεεγυλων αη (A II 418)

39.2 FRAMING ACTION IN NARRATIVE: VERBS OF SAYING, PERCEIVING, FEELING (“verba dicendi et sentendi”)

1. ηπογηψηθης ραρου ηαιας η ηεγμογε αη πε ηεγη- 
   ηκτογ επεητεηε (A II 102)
2. πρωηε αργηψε εηο ηπςα ηογηψψης ηζηαζε επεη-
   ςηηηεο γηγ ρεγα γημο ηεηαηγοο ηαί ετηαη ηζηη-
   ςατακε (A I 453)
3. πεγα γη εηε Ξεκηογε εη εγα γημο γηε ... ηγγ ρεγα 
   ηνη ηεη ηεηπηγημηκηηγοο (III 118)
   {NB: εγα: Second Present}
4. ηερκω γαρ ηοηη επεηθης ηεη ηζης (A II 520)
5. ηη ηεηγογοογη ηε ηα αη πε ηεηπηοο ηεη αηηγηηη 
   ηακτογ ηηεε εηραη ηεηγο (A II 2f.)
TOPICS OF ADVANCED SYNTAX

{NB: ἐνεγ- Second Imperfect, marking the question as rhetorical}

6. (Of Jacob and his parents) ἐνεγςωτὰς ἴκωςοι ἱδίπυςῳ ἑτανοῦᾳ (A 1 225)

7. ἀβραὰμ πενεῖωτ ἐνογουῳ πε ἐτρεγενήῳ ὑπὲ ὡ ἑβολ ἰςκαρὰ ἰγ ωςερ ἑκάσγουῳ πε ἐτρεγενήῳ ὑπὶ ὑπὲ ὡ ἑα ἱαβραὰμ ἱγ ὡς τα τε ἡντανοὺῃ ἕτο ὑπουῃ ἱαβραὰμ ἵπτεμιττᾶλῳ εαὑχπο ἵκακ ἱαβολ ἰςκαρὰ ἵπτεμιττᾶλῳ ἱα ὑπὲ ὡ ἱα ὑπουῃ ἱα γερῖ (IV 26)

39.3 BACKGROUND, ANTERIORITY IN NARRATIVE. NARRATOR'S INTERPOSITION (interpretation, background information) or PERSONAL-ATTITUDINAL PARENTHESIS

Imperfect, Pluperfect (νε-ἀψ-/νε-ἀπῆ-), νε- + Nominal Sentence

1. ἄγεςεε ἐγρ πε Ἱπατογεὶ ἑβολ ἐπογοεὶ χενεγῳοον ἵπτεμιπιοοι εγμεζ ἰογοεὶ (III 48)
   {NB: Ἱπατογ‒ = Ἐπατογ‒}

2. ἱγρ ἱππωρ ἵννεοογ ἵμπαπὶπ ἴνεγῳοο γνπὶειμα ἴνωοἐ ἱογωτ ἱνεγ ω ἰχπὶ ἵπτεμι ἵντετ ἰταν ἵνογοογ ἵνεγἴπειμοο ἱογωτ ἱγ ἱγ ἱγ ἵπτειαβω ἱογωτ (A II 352)

3. (The destruction of the Deluge descended upon them) οὐμόνον χεῦπεογα νογβ εογα ἅλα χενεγηπκερα πε ἵπτεπιπεο ος (Wess. 9 86)
   {NB: -ἔπεκ- “do also...”; lexeme premodifier}

4. τα τε ἡτευμαυῳ ἱνιογαλι νεαργοεὶ πε ἱγ ἵνομε εματε ἵεκσαογ ἱπεταματιμος ἱγ ἑομε ἱνοέ (Ch. 122)
   {OBS. Note the use of the present conjointly with the Imperfect}

5. χεαρπογ ἐγρ χεογαγαγαὶον πε ἵκαα γ εςάγα (A II 44)
   {OBS. -c neutric feminine, pronominally heralding the χε- clause}

6. (The Sword returned to its sheath) ἑβολ ἰγ χεαςεε ἅλα χεαςαςfeof πε (IV 11)

7. χεαρπῳῳ ἰγ χγγογῳ ἰνε ἱνκοογε ἱνεγαγγετος ἰγ εαὐςαμ αν (Ch. 72)

8. χεαχεπαι ἰγ ἰο ἑπαθογογ. ἴνοο χενεαγαςητογ ἵν-
40. THE IMPERFECT IN DIALOGUE OR EXPOSITION: PAST HABIT, STATE, DURATIVE ACTION

1. (Confessions:) νεοτιπολική μνήμη ηειο μνατοι μνημα (Α 184)  
   {NB: μνηm indefinite, not interrogative}
2. νεινοκνεκ γαρ γραφή μεγάλη θεογανίας πε ετερωμε αρο
   επανα η επερευος μετηρνούντε (ΙΙΙ 39)
3. ἀνοκ δε ηειο ηπαξοςις αν πε ετραποτ ἤτοοτογ
   ἤνεντι ημοι ἱδοντ (ΙΙΙ 145)
4. νειογωμη με νεκρην ετετεττήρασε (ΙV 93)
5. γαθε γαρ ἰπατούρκοικοινίας μνήμαν νεοτιποτο ετε
   ἰενεγωτ-τῆγοιτε ἠκιογε (ΙV 105)
6. νειιωνοξκε ναι μαγατ ηεναγωμπο εον ἢκκαναλον
   ἰημαι ηειίμενε φτενεικερησβ (ΙΙΙ 147)
7. νειογωμη μεν πε εταλθοσκε εροφ (i.e. about David)
   καταπενήπνα αλλα δεκας νενεσκωκ ζηναι ντηκελει
   ετκεβήνηςις ηενταβαγεο ερον τήνακτον τενογ ενε
   γραφη ετογαβ ντηγακε εροογ (ΧΙ. 209)

41. THE PRETERITE CONVERTER EXPRESSING REMOTENESS FROM REALITY or HYPOTHETICALITY

41.1 THE REMOTE-HYPOTHETICAL CONDITION ("irrealis" protasis): CIRCUMSTANTIAL PRETERITE

ἐνεγκεκτόν (... πε) / ἐνεν(ν)πεκτόν ἀν (... πε), "If he heard/did not hear..."
ἐνετάγκεκτόν (... πε) / ἐνεητάπεκτόν (... πε) "If he had (not) heard/had he (not) heard..."
ἐνε- + Nominal Sentence: "If (he) were, had been..."

NB: the most common result clause has the past future μενα ... πε, see 41.3
TOPICS OF ADVANCED SYNTAX

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern par. 630; Steindorff par. 486-489; Till par. 456; Vergote par. 212(3); Lambdin par. 29.1; Polotsky, “Conjugation System” par. 17; Young, “Unfulfilled Conditions”

1. ενετετίποιον ἵνα ἐρρωσον ἐνετεῖναρσοτε ἵτωσι ἃν ἐν (Mun. 102)
2. ενεγογιδόν οὐγά εἰσθενεν οὐγαλ ἔνεγουγνήσαλ ἕτας  ἑνε

ναταλάδου ἃν ἐν (III 36)
3. ενεγο ἐγράφωσην ἐνεγιμπτάθανεν ἑνεγησίνεαν ἃ ην ἐν (III 75)
4. ενεγενεβολ ἐγράφω ληθην δὲ ἐνεγγέμεν ἢμον ἱμαν ἱσμὲν ἑνεγαβο

τω ἡμῖν (E 87)
5. ενεγκαγμιτάσε ηνακε ενεγκαβογόν ἢματα ἢκτροις (IV 94)

[OBS. The protasis here is an adverbial phrase, with no verb]
6. ενεγκιπτικά εἰ ἐνετεῖναρσει ἃν ἐν ἐν εἰκτ-πυργος

(III 21)
7. ενεγκόμνον ἱεγαμαποος ἢματα ἤν ἐν ξε ... (Ch. 179)
8. ενεγκαβαρασ ἵσον ὅν ἐν πταειο ἡνματοι εἰς ἑγα

γογόνο (Ch. 70)
9. ενεγκαβοβ ἢν ἐν τειανομία νεεπξνογο ἡνεγαβερ-καειν

ἀν ἐν (IV 157)
10. ενεγκπεπακανασ ἵσον ἵνα ἐνεπρωμεν ἵσμα ἱσμὴν εἰνανούμν (A 1 393)
11. ενεγκπομο γερος ἃν (i.e. the well) νεεπξνογε ἐροο γεν ἑ

ετεγεσεμοο (III 70)
12. ενεγκτεκεμ-κοκόν ἓν ἐντογ εἰς ἑκβοτε ὅσον ἑν

ἐροκ ἐν ἑτετεκφ ὁμηνυν 2ήγεν.contrib (Ch. 29)

{NB: εντογ see eine}

41.2 THE REMOTE or HYPOTHETICAL WISH

ζαμοι ενε-, ζαμοι νε- “Would that...!”

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern par. Steindorff par. 491; Till par. 456 B2; Vergote par. 201(3)

1. ζαμοι ενεπαγγαίοτα ἃν (Ch. 77)
2. ζαμοι ἃν ἱσμένεν ἱσμένοις ζαροο ἱπειειατεκτῆ

εἰρμαγ (Mun. 100)
3. ἔμφασε ὅτι ἤθικα τὸν ἱππαμμήνως ἦν καὶ ὡς ἡ ἱππα-
μένως ἵνα τὸ ἱππαμμήνως ἦν πάντως Ἣνογμένη (P 131.8 94 Ῥο)
4. ἔμφασε περί ἔναντι ἧς ἦν τῶν (III 83)
5. ἔμφασε ἐπενεργίζεται ἱμόως ἦν ὄρθον πε (IV 66)
6. ἔμφασε ἐναντίονоς ἴμοογ (IV 92)
7. ἔμφασε ἐνενιώσει ἐνκατατάσσεν ἀνά τῶν ἔναντι ἐκατά-
τησοφίς ἄγω ἐνενιώσασθαι εἰπασάθος ἰπποῖνυ ἱμοῦ πε ἱπ-
παμμήνως ἶπποικομένος (IV 180)

41.3 THE REMOTE or HYPOTHETICAL RESULT following a
remote protasis (41.1)

Past future (ἡμνα-, ἴμ- + Nominal Sentence; ... πε is the rule.

1. ἐνευρήσασθα αὐτε ἐναμάζῃ ἐπιτορη οὐπερβῶντ Ἱπ-
νασω ἰπ τε (IV 19)
2. ἐνευρήσασθα ἐνετίμησεν ἰμαλαμ οὐπαπήταμοος ε-
ροογ (III 108)
{NB: οὐπαπήτα = οματικός}
3. ὁ ἐπερεματυρος ὅν ἴμανα τὸν ἱππαμμήνως ἐνναεινε 
πε ἰμεντάθοντ ἐρογ ἵπογμ (Α 1 102)
4. ἱνάβα μέν ἰντητὴ ἄγω ἰξενό ἰπενδοεικ μένειν ἱμᾶς ἰπ
πε (IV 96)
{NB: ἱνάβα is the approx. equivalent of a negative remote
protasis: “Were it not”)
5. ἐνευρήτουσιν γὰρ εἰσὶ τὸ ἱππαμμήνως ἐγρογ ἱπποῦ ἱβί-
παπόεικ ἰπαποκόλος (Wccs. 18 128)
6. ἔμφασε ἐπενταγοθύνῃ ἱμογ ἔσκε ἐπεμακάρ ἱκεο-
νογ ἱππολαγός ἱπαλάκα ἄγω οὐρομήθει πε ἱπ-
πειθανός ἱπογ ἐτευγερεπηκαρογ (IV 9)
UNIT (II): THE CONJUNCTIVE
(sections 42-43)

42.1 The conjunctive extending (continuing-and-representing, extending, “carrying on”) preceding conjugation-forms
42.2 The conjunctive extending (continuing-and-finitizing, “carrying on”) preceding infinitives

43. The conjunctive as a “that” clause form: in construction with preceding adverbial (“conjunction”), nouns or clauses.

42.1 THE CONJUNCTIVE CONTINUING-AND-REPRESENTING (“CARrying ON”, EXTENDING) CONJUGATION FORMS

Form: ἀγωτι. Nominal, demonstr./indef. pronoun, 2nd person sgl.
     fem. actor: ἀγωτι.

The conjunctive (7.4) serves to express a special, closely-knit kind of coordination (“microcoordination”) to a preceding verbal clause amounting to its extension. It is in this role either preceded by ἀγω “additionally”, “and”; ἡ “or”; ἀπαρα “however”, and other conjunctival adverbials, or it may be conjunctionless; in the latter case it usually expresses directed coordination (“and then . . .”, “and so . . .”, “so that . . .”). Note that, while its verbal semantics (tense, mode etc.) are wholly induced by the conjugation form “carried on” or extended by it, its actor may either resume the actor of the extended conjugation form, or a new actor (noun or pronoun) may be asserted. Similarly, its negativizing (by -τι-, 7.1-4) may either be induced by a negativized precedent clause or be asserted as a new negation.

Illustrated below are the constructions of (a) the conjunctive extending specific conjugation forms, (b) the conjunctive extending various protatic clauses (“if . . .” clauses).

NB: (1) note the prevalence of subcoordination following imperatives.
    (2) The 1st sgl. form of the conjunctive is ἄρι- (for the microcoordination function) or τι- (for subcoordination).

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 440, 443-445, 447; Steindorff parr. 368-369; Tilli parr. 321-322;
Vergote parr. 161(1); Lambdin par. 25.2; *Shisha-Halevy. Chapter 7
(a) The conjunctive extending specific conjugation forms:
1. ἡματολπα δε ἦταξω ἠπεισάξε ἡμαρφίνασσί (III 123)
2. τῶν ἦτας ημετάνοι (III 181)
3. συνώπε ἦτετίμεστω (Ch. 93)
   [OBS. The neutric c “it” with ἠωπε “happen” is typically continued by the conjunctive as a content-clause (“that ...”)]
4. ὅγυμω ἡρκω (A I 206)
5. σετρώτε ἐχεῖ ἡμαγγελος ξενεπνατάσσε ἠμοογ ἵγω ἵμοιοντος (IV 21)
6. ωρετβάξιλε ἱγογο μου ἰντάκα ἦτετροογε εἰ εκεῖ ἵνα τε (A II 191f.)
7. ἰαγνανέσε ἠμοογ αν πε υκτογνοχον εκεῖ επικωτι ἵμω εκεῖ ἐπισὸν ἵμω ἰσεραοτον επικά (IV 24)
8. ἡματωτι ἐνεπταξίευσα ἐρον ἦκτον ἦτας ἐκεῖκασωτι ἐπετασσικος ἡ σφ (Ch. 94)
9. ἀω ἄμα ἑτεραναρετ ἠμοογ ἦ ἱπόωκ εροογ ἵμοογ ἵμοογ ἵπτες ἰπευγχ (Ch. 56)
   [NB: ἡ· see eine]
10. ερέπεξεν ἦκτον ἐροογ ἵπογρ αἰγο ντεσοογ ἡ σφ (Ch. 85)
11. ἀκ ἰελαχικτον πνευμαξε ἐτεκταπο ἰδαν ἡτανοει ἵτετι ἰπεσκύε (IV 41)
12. ἀρογανεκεν ἱμω ἱπεσκωτι (Ch. 163)
13. εἰεβερξω ἰτασσασο (III 183)
14. ἰπτερεναον ἰγονο επποχε λεπερξε ἱπετροσοχον ἱπουοςκι ἰνογο ἵμω ἱματαςεβις ἰμω Ἴντεωπε ἱμαξε ἐπεπετούοις (IV 5)
15. ἰπτετα 2αρο ἰαγατε τεγαναγιν ἱτεσκοτι ἱςανωμα ἵτετι (III 191)
16. κατ τατροεσσι ὑγοναυ ἢσφ (III 16)

(b) The conjunctive extending protatic (“if...”) clauses:
1. εὐαπε ἐπεὶ εἰς τί ἠμογενα γεγαντα πήνα γεγανωρ σε ἠμενεσε ἠμενεσεις ἠγυ εντας ἰςαν ἰπετας 2αρο ἰγογε (P 130.2 41 160)
   {NB: εγγαντα: the circumstantial is governed by εὐαπε “If it be the case that...”}
2. ὀγαθόμ πε ἐτραπαλοισ τραπε σε ἰπωβε ἠπερξ- ἰπωγο ἰπωρη ἐπεμεσε ἠπηδιαλοισ ἦ ἱποτρ ἰόμα (Ch. 63)
42.2 THE CONJUNCTIVE CONTINUING-AND-FINITIZING (“CARRYING ON”, EXTENDING) INFINITIVES

Here the conjunctive, extending the infinitive (actorless), also supplies a finite actor (pronoun or noun), i.e. finitizes it. The pronominal actor used is either one in agreement with the context, or the generic “you” (2nd person singular masculine).

Bibliography:
Stern par. 447(g); *Shisha-Halevy, par. 7.2.5

1. συνδομ ημουγ εμαη εξωι ητεπθεοεις κω εαγ εβολ
   (III 135f.)

2. μανογς καν ερος φος ητηκαλρονομει ιπεουγ ηγογο
   εραντ ητηκαλτι καν ινογοςς εμαε ον μανογς καν εσφι
   σιομ ην ινομοτ εβολ ητηπθεοεις ηγογο εραηγιντη
   ητεπθογεις τι ογης (P 130.4 38 vo)

3. κεινουςδ ην κεκδη ιετεητεογκε αγγ ητηηκουη
   -ηςον ην ιεογο (IV 93)

4. ουγε εψυη πιογ ινειεοτε ενταγκοτι ητηγυ-
   πομειν (III 118)

5. ουγητακαριος πε τι ιπηηκε νητηκα ιτουωτι κ εακη
   ον ηνω εροκ ετα/widgets ινεηςαλταλ λακ (III 65f.)
   {NB: η εακ- ... on “or, even having...”}

6. ηπαξκ ιν εβολ ιηπομος πε ιερεπητηηςογκ ιμες-
   τερεθαξε (III 65)
7. ἄρεθρη νὰς ὁν εὑρεγομὴν ἑσεῶ νῖμακ ἑχτῇντρα-νεᾶ (Ch. 131)
8. ἦπαρακάλε ἐπετεινὴντρί-νητ εὐπρεπετεπομέλει ἀλλα ἐπετεινηρὴν ἑνωὰς ἐτοιάζω (III 31)
9. ἐπετεινηρὸς ἡγοῦτ ἡμεῖς ἔτοιάζω ἄγω ἑπετεπὴ ἐτοιάζω ἡγοῦτ ἡμεῖς (A II 403)
10. ἡμῖνατρικτής οὐν ἡγοῦσαν ἰς ὁτε σῆνα ἰς ἀλλα ἴς ἡγοῦσα ἐματε ἄγω ἱετεῖρὴν ἕσωτῷ (III 169)
11. εἰς ὑπερτρεπὲ ὀψιν ἱωβα ἑνόμκου (III 131)

43. THE CONJUNCTIVE AS A "THAT"-CLAUSE: IN CONSTRUCTION WITH PRECEDING ADVERBIALS ("conjunctions"), NOUNS or CLAUSES

Note especially the conjunctive following εἰμὶν "unless", ἐστὶ "so that" and its negative μὴν ὁτε "lest", ἀρκεῖν "hardly", ζάμοι (and ἑνόμκο) "Would that..."; the Nominal Sentence καὶ ὁ διὰ τὸν τοῦτον ἕτερον διὰ τὸν τοῦτον "It is but a step..." and similar; ἡμῶν, "It is better"

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 443, 611-616; Steindorf parr. 371; Till parr. 323-324; 416; Vegotte parr. 161(1), 209(4,5), 211(3,4), 212(5); Lambdin parr. 30.10; *Shisha-Halevy parr. 7.3-7.4

1. ἡμῶς ὁν τος ἡμῶς εἰμὶνο ἕτερον ἐπετεινηρὸς ἀγων ἑσεῖς (Ch. 158)
2. οὐ γὰρ πεῖ ὁ ᾿οβν εἰμὶν Ἐπιτής οὐβα ἑγεῖς (III 107)
3. σερας ἐκεῖνας ἐπετεινὴς ἐπεῖς ἐπετεινὴς ἐροῦ (Ch. 85)
4. σαίει σαίειν ἕνας ἑπεῖς ἑπετεινὴς ἐστίς ἐπετεινὴς ἐπετεινὴς (Ch. 21)
5. ἡμῶς ἀν εἰκῆς ἡμῖν ἑπετεινὴς ἐστίς ἐπετεινὴς ἐπεῖς ἐροῦ 
6. ἐφοῦ ἐφο_markup
8. πολείν εὑρίσκωκ αν εράτη ἱογον νιμ γαπλως εἰπάρτθρε ἐροογ ηονις γαρ νᾶβωκ εράτη ἡπαρχων ἵ πρῆμαο (Ming. 84)

9. ἀλλο ἱτετήπης ἱαλλαγ ἂεὐσυνε ἀλλο τρεκαναγκαζε ἴμοκ παρανεταπεκής ὅπογ (IV 85Γ.)
[OBS. Note the variation of the conjunctive and τρε- as "that"-forms]

10. οὐρίκε  ὅνις ἰ τετρῳκε ὅτι ἵπποντε ἵ  ἱγουσπε  ἵπποντε ἵ  ἰπασιβολος (Ch. 68)

11. ἰκεκογι ἁν πε ἱγογοςί  ὑβεπερεκςων (P 131.5 79 84)

12. γενοῖτο δὲ ἰγογχο ἱπεταμε ἵ ceso ἐβολ  ἱπεθομογ' ἵνα ἵγω ἱγαρες ἐπεχή ἵγω νεμψ ἐβολ  ἱπεθοτριτ  ἵνα (Wess. 9 88)

13. ἱαμοὶ ἱκετῆρβοτε ἰπνοοτε ἱ ἱκετῆλαγ ἱβοτε (IV 164)

14. ἰπανογι ἁν ἱτῆργουσογ ἱ κναγ ἱ ὑγεβοτ ἱ ὑγρομπε ἱ ἰπεαγε  ἰνθ ἱκ ώ τη  ἱπαὶ 22εγκογι ἱβαγανογ ἱγογο ἱρος ἱτρεπκρογε ἱγρυκτ ἵ  ἱμον 22αὶ ἱγογκωτ (Wess. 9 158)
UNIT III: CONDITIONAL AND RELATED CONSTRUCTIONS
(sections 44-48)

44.1 εἴφανε εἴρητι generic-eventual condition: “If and when...”, “Whenever...”
44.2 ζωταν εἴφαν-: “As soon as...”, “Immediately when...”
45 εἴφαη- argumentative, topical condition: “Granted that...”, “Given/supposing that...”
45.1 εἴφαη- “as if...”
46 εἴφηνε, καν disjunction of alternative cases: “Whether... or...”, “Be it..., be it...”
47 ενε- remote or hypothetical (“unreal”) condition: see 41.1-3
48 Concessive “conditions” (“Even though...”, “Even if...”, “Even if (as is usual/apparent)...”): καν, εἴφαη-

44.1 εἴφάνε εἴρητι, GENERIC-EVENTUAL CONDITION: “If and when...”, “Whenever...” (7.3)

Note the use of the Conditional in general (also gnomic) statements, with the aorist as a typical apodosis

NB: εἴφάνε εἴρητι is a rare form of the negated Conditional (normally εἴφαντι-)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern parr. 420-421; Stein dorff pat. 492; Till parr. 447-448; Vergote parr. 161(5), 212(2); Lambdin pat. 29.1; Wilson pp. 90-95; Young, “Esópe”

1. άλλως εἴφανε εἴρηνε εβολ εἴφανε εἴρηνε ενεκείτε ηγάρταος ωαίρε ε
   έπετεμπορικούποννούτε (IV 22)
2. εἴφανποννούτε πραγα γεναπαράκε (III 31)
   {NB: παράκε = παράκε}
3. ζίφανομομοζε κεν ενομομοζε ζετετριας ετογαν (Wess. 9 136)
   {NB: ζίφαν- = εἴφαν-}
4. εἴφανκοος ἤξανον τίκοουν αν ηλαγ τίκοουν αν
   ηναε νιον πετανωςογούπητι ἠπακειεν (Ch. 68)
5. εἴφανως πε ας ητενεσσης ετηπουςονοτιη υπιμαια γα-
6. οντως ουπονηρον ἂν πε ερωμενογρωμε εγημε ἄπεψετε ἡμοιενεν επομονη ερωμενογρωμε ενω εβοι εωσμηνητη τιοντω ἡγονοι αγη νηραισε εξωψη (III 40)
7. τεσσυρην τηρη πε ερωμενον μερουμενον ετενηναυ εροιν αγη νημεραπνουτε ετενηναυ εροιν ἄν (III 153)
8. (Let no one hit a man in my name...) εινον ∆ω ὁν ειςωμα, μογ (IV 98)
9. ερωμενογρωμε ηκας ἡγια εξωψη ἡμιν ἡμοιον αγη νημεραπνοετε ηκενογα (A II 41)
10. συβεσβυνε ερωμενογρωμε ερνην ἡμοιον μυνοβε εροιν (A II 60)
11. ερωμενογρωμε ρω χωριμενοεν ουτε ερωμενοεντεφαγυνε αιωνεν μυνακαθάρσεια μενηρατασωμ (A I 147)
   {NB: ἐρωμα- = ερωμα-}
12. επτιμαοεις μηνεσβυνε πινοβε νασολη (A I 178)

44.2 zotan ερωμενωται "As soon as ...", "Immediately when ...", "Only when ..."; "Whenever ...

1. zotan de ερωμπατανας πεπη αακαθαρτον δημα ρημωμεν ηεμαζη ηεκαογαν ηενογα (Wess. 9 141)
   {NB: εκαογα = εκαογα, an Akhmimicin in Shenoute’s idiom}
2. zotan ερωμα επηκασπζη εινοβε ... τοην ηεναζη αοεςπα εξηπεθοροιες ενεαςος (III 219)
3. zotan ερωμαεμε επωρμη εινοβε ηεναογαραη ηεδηναλαυ ειςικαζαν μηνα εθηναυ εγναζαειογαν ηεκενηνογαγογαν (IV 159F.)
4. zotan ερωμαεμε μερουμενε ζαιρηνουτε τηθομ μηνοβε εςρπα εξωψη (Ch. 68)
5. (It is a great perfection that a man should cut himself off from his brother or son or daughter of father or mother for the sake of God) zotan ερωμαποεν επεναταζηλιοσ (IV 128)
6. (The order of solitary prayer or meditation:) zotan ερωμαπαι ει επεειτ ηετεπαι ταο λαο εςρπαι ταξη (IV 156)
45 εὐχε- ARGUMENTATIVE TOPICAL “CONDITION”: “Granted that...”, “Given/supposing that...”, “If (as we know/as you will no doubt agree)...”

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern par. 629; Steindorff par. 485; Wilson p. 98f.

1. εὐχε-ἀνομηθένησοον τεφυσίς ἔνεεοοῦ πε ὁγεὶον ἦναπως κακε πεκε (Ch. 65)
2. εὐχενανογεννήσε ὡημ ἀν εγκῷ ἔνωογ ἁνετισμαξε ἁμπατογνοει πῳ ἐνανογνῃ ὁγο ᾿ηςων ετετήνετο εβολ ᾿ηνογ εανετίκων δύαι (IV 96)
3. εὐχεστηραιστικος δι ἀνεκελλήν πωρῷ εβολ ᾿ηνεγάθη ἀνεσετίτου εγραὶ ᾿εθυγκρισις εὐςευςάνα εἰς ἀνεκοιτε ἔνωο εἴρε ἁμπα ᾿ης ἱνον εγνωρῷ εβολ ᾿ηνεγτύς (III 45)
[OBS. ἀευγυςάνα: the Second Present introduced by ἀε- conveys a skepticism about the truth of the statement; approx. “allegedly”]
4. εὐχεσειςροῳ εγραὶ εὐωτῆ ἔνεε ἃνογεης ἁνεπρεκακει ἁνωτῆ ᾿ηνακεκ δι ἁεβοκ εβολ ᾿ητετήνη (III 145)
5. εὐχετακό ᾿ητηνρωμε εἰς ἀνώ ᾿ης ἁνηαρφῳ ἁν εὐαντολμα εκενααελοα (Ch. 76)
6. εὐχεσεσεικ τεσρε ἁνεωμάνα ᾿ηταςρο ἁπρον τηρωμε πος ἁλλον ποεικ ᾿ης ποιει ᾿ηπων εγνατααρο ᾿ηνυρ ᾿ηπρον ᾿ηνακεκ ᾿ητή (Ch. 119)
7. εὐχεσεογῦδον ᾿ητεςγίμε εβονοει επεςαι ετειου μηδ εμπροι εβονοει ετειογίμε (Or. 157)
8. εὐχεσεστακτικτικ ᾿ημαν ᾿ητακτελπις ᾿ημαν ᾿ηπμυς τηριον ᾿αῳ παοεικ ᾿ηπμυς τηριον (Cat. 43)
9. εὐχεστηριμεεγε γαι Ἴννοοτε ἀναμαζε ἀν τηρωμε ετηρνοβε ἁνανας ἵν ἀναμαζε ἁμογ (III 16f.)

45.1 ᾿ας εὐχε- “As if...”

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Till par. 368, 459; Vergote par. 212(6)

1. ἁνατακτοβ ᾿ηπετοο αγννωβ ἄνον ᾿ας εὐχεστήνοβε ἁν νε (IV 182)
{NB: ἀς = ἡς}
2. ὁγ γωψ ἐν γως εὐχετιογκαὶ ἅνογς εῦ (Ch. 30)
3. τὰ τε ὅτε εἰναὶ ἔκωφ οἐπαν ἅπνογτε γως
   εὐχετητηπὶ ἐπισ ἡ (Ch. 155)
4. ἄνεροίσιν εὐωβε ἄνων γως εὐχενονοναίμανην ἄνων (IV 73)
   {NB: εὐωβε = εὐωβε}
5. ἀναγ ἀνοκ εὐς ἐξεκεῖακας-οὐγοὶ ἢ ὤγαρκας
   (III 208)
   {OBS. εὐς- (without the preposition γως) has itself the rare
    meaning “as ἢ”}

46. εὐωπε (… εὐωπε …), καν (… καν …) DISJUNCTION OF
    ALTERNATIVE CASES: “Whether … or …”, “Be it …, be it …”

In this construction (especially common in instructive and preceptive contexts) εὐωπε and καν are often combined with the circumstantial conversion.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern part. 626-628; Young, “Esôpe”

1. εὐωπε οὐγοοὺτ πεν εὐωπε οὐγζίμε τεν εὐςωρε
    ωμε πεν εὐςωἀρε ωμε τε (IV 56)
2. εὐωπε εὐνάου πε εὐωπε οὐκογι πε (III 198)
3. εὐωπε μή πωῳ πε εὐωπε δε τεηρω τε (IV 110)
   {NB: μή = μεν}
   {OBS. Here, as in several other texts, the alternatives are expressed
    by the special “impersonal” (“It’s …”) Nominal Sentence pattern,
    in which the theme (πε, τε) resumes the rheme: see section 3.5}
4. ἄνογεἰσι δε νιμ εὐαγγην εβακ εὐωρ ἄνεω επ-
    ευωγς εὐωπε μεν εὐωρπ τε εγναβκ εὐρυμν …
    εὐωπε δε πογζε πε εγναβκ εὐρξαγ ν ογα (IV 60)
5. εὐωπε μεν εἀνηπε νησεῳσε … εἰεν καταϊσιον
    εὐωπε δε ντανεσεκερασε εἰεν καταϊσιον (IV 3)
6. εὐωπε εὐγροβτ καλὼς ων (IV 109)
7. εὐωπε εὐξηψάμο ἡ εννοοῦσε εὐνοισιν ενοῦν εβαλ
    ἄντυναγων γαγ ω ντεγκογιρ τοτρ τοτεγρή ἄνω ν
    τεβίς … (IV 123)
8. καν οὐγοοὐτ πε καν οὐγζίμε τε (IV 154)
9. καν εὐενρήμασο ἡ ε ντοφ εὐενζήκε νε (III 222)
10. καν εγγωσω η εγμότη (IV 153)
11. καν εαγεσισπι η ιτοπ εαγογεμογκογι (IV 111)
12. καν επεςμε ισοογ πε καν επνοβ μπασχα πε (IV 84)

47 REMOTE or HYPOTHETICAL ("unreal") CONDITION: see sections 41.1-3

48 CONCESSIVE CLAUSES: "Even though ...", "Even if ...": καν εωξε- "Even if (as is usual/apparent) ..."

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern par. 628; Steindorff par. 496; Till par. 452

1. ἡναχοος αν η καν εγχοος εηναχοος ἰκεσμοτ (IV 11)
2. καν αγωρπφρεννα ινητογ ρηκατογ (IV 19)
3. γενρωμε ινεοογν αν κεντοκ πε πνογτε καν εγνταγ μπκοσμος τιρψ μηταγγ γαρ (III 90)
4. καν εγκκοτκ (i.e. the people in the house) ερεπνοεν ιερο ιινιχει μλακτοογ επαγογ (i.e. the thieves) (IV 25f.)
5. καν ουρηππαν πε ... ογακαμε πε ετκομκαμ (IV 89)
6. καν αηροχε εκενερφγ μη ιναχειρ εο επεσισιστηριον (III 93)
{NB: ιναα = εναα, Second Future in a rhetorical question}
7. ογοει ναν κεκαν τηιαταγαβον αν ιινπενωψυ ετβεο γηντομ ἱππενελος ετοφαλ υν μονον χειμηπραικαν χιυα ιινπηαγον ον εβοι ιηιπηανφψις (Ch. 79)
8. το ινακαμ εροογ ιινεοογ ιπαςίκ καταπενταγκοομ ιηας ινοπ καν ειεκαμε ινμαγ γηιζενσακε ιειρηκικον καν ειο ιηε επετραμε ινμαγ η ετκομ ιερογ (III 40f.)
9. καν εαπεπεπερπηε ιηιαμ ετιμαγ ιηε πετλακωτμ ερογ (Ch. 198)
10. ογηογοσακε καν ιηογεσκοοο αη ινακοο (Ch. 68)
11. ειαεμπεαοκοτα μλακογ ειακοσε ναοκ (III 21)
12. εαεκαζα νε αρομε αρεαψψνχ ιπρηε ριεερε γιον γικωκε ναεκοον ον ιηινετροεις εωερε γιεερε γιεκω (IV 21)
UNIT (IV): THE INFINITIVE OUTSIDE CONJUGATION
(sections 49-51)

49 The infinitive as noun phrase: determination

50 The infinitive as nexus constituent: actor of a conjugation form, rhyme or theme in a Nominal Sentence, topic, focus of a Cleft Sentence

51 The infinitive as object (governed) or complement of a verb

49 THE INFINITIVE AS NOUN PHRASE: DETERMINATION

In addition to the position following all determinators (1.1), the infinitive occurs adverbially after e-, τ (as object or complement, 50) and adnominally, after τ (attributively, 1.2). It is negated as τ ἀν + infinitive.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
Stern par. 456-460, 467-468; Steindorff par. 223; Tull par. 348; Lambdin par. 13.3; Polotsky, “Conjugation System”, par. 7

1. πε ... εβολ ἰτετρίχ ἀγῳν ὄγουσὶ ἐπιστε (IV 176)
2. πκάχ- πτ (IV 67)
3. πτμήσων (A II 233)
4. πς ὑπενικεῖον ἀνοῇ ἐγερ ὑεκανεῖον (IV 86)
5. ταφμή μπτ ἐμπς (III 65)
6. παὶ ὑπρωκτίς ὑογικό ὑογεῖο ὑογιὼ ὑογιὼ ὑογ- τωπ (IV 57)
7. σαμελετα ἐκατω ὁμοκεκ ἐταναγ (Wess. 9 172)
8. ἐνογτακο ὁκατακο (III 183)
9. ὁγυκνο ὁματρο ὅνερ (P 130.4 110 552)
10. πησ ἀν ὁγον ὁγῳν ὁμα ὁγῳν ἠκατανε μἐν ὁγῳν ὁγῃ ὁγῃ ὁγῃ ὁγῃ (IV 53-56)
11. σεντων αὐτε ἐκατω ὁκατω ὁκατω ὁκατω ὁκατω ὁκατω ὁκατω ὁκατω ὁκατω ὁκατω ὁκατω ὁκατω ὁκατω (III 213)
12. ὅνογον ὁκατο ἐβολ ἐκατω ὁμογον αὐτο ὁμογον ἐταμα (IV 174)
13. ἐκατογια ὁγῳν ὁικ αγῳ ὁμ ὁμἀ ἐταμα (III 94)
[OBS. Note that the negated infinitive is not coordinated like a zero-article noun, by 21- (section 2.1); consider also the difference in determination evident in text 20 between the “affirmative” and negated infinitives]

14. πογωψ ἰπεγητ μπεγκτον μμιν ἰψου (A I 23)
15. επογωψ ἐβολ (Ch. 114)
16. εκεμαζω νΨψε επωψ εκεμαζων ηλαος επωψ (III 218)
17. εκεμαζως εροου ἐβολ ην ισετψ ηνιμ (218)
18. ιγψοψε ςτψου ιππεψοψεςζψες (A I 32)
19. τεξψεια εξεψψουμε (IV 20)
20. νανοψε εψω ιτεις (A I 55)
21. ω νιτψω ιψιτ (A I 201)
22. ετβψψουμ ςιμ ςω (A I 205)
[OBS. The coordination by 21- proves this to be true zero determi- nation]
23. πεαζω ην πψιψε ην πτψψψε ιπεψιον δνοψε (A I 118)
24. πψαψ γαρ εψψο ἰναγψελος ιψοψψε (A I 165)
[OBS. πψαψ ... e- note that the substantiation of the infinitive by determination does not affect its rection]
25. οψλοψος ετψβψψκ ετψκκλψςια ιναψψειψ μην ιγψψ ιψοψψ ψοψψ μην ιψοψ αιψοψ (A I 197)
{NB: this is a homily superscription or title}
26. εψζψος εγαρ ςητψη ηψψψι εψψαί ιψεψψι (Z 462)
27. con ςε ςε νανοψψψουε ταρψζψινε ιψε ετψψψψ con δε ςον ςα νανοψψψψψειε ιψοψψ εψψψψ (A I 37)

50 THE INFINITIVE AS NEXUS CONSTITUENT: ACTOR or THEME OF A CONJUGATION FORM, THEME or RHEME OF A NOMINAL SENTENCE, FOCUS OF A CLEFT SENTENCE, TOPIC

Bibliography:
Stern par. 453; Till par. 336-337; Vergote par. 185(4); Shisha-Halevy, “Patterns”

1. νανοψψψψψ εψψαί εχψψψοσε ςψψοσε ...νανοψει ςον εψψαί ςιωψψ ςε δε εβολ ςιωψψ νψψψψψψ ςηψκ ρψψψψψψ (IV 175)
2. εψψεναναψψψψψψε ςαλα εψψψε ςηψτψς ινψψψψψψε εψψψψψψςψδψς δψψ ςψψψε ςαν ςηψτψς ινψψψψψψε νακαψαρτψς (Wess. 9 98)
3. ἀπῳπε ἰῳβε εἰκίπαζο (III 213)
4. περὶμεεγε γαρ ἰπνούγε ηαλαρτε αν ἰπρωμε ετμρνοβε (III 16)
5. πεμκαρ ἰγτ ηπτακο ἰηπωια εταγααη ἰδικαλαε ἰτεκκλαρη ῥωμε εκολαζε ἰηγτ ηηκαβεε (A I 59)
6. ογ εροι πε πε- ογωβ ειςοογη ιμωρ αν (Wess. 9 171)
   {NB: ιςε- construct (prenominal) state of αηω}
7. ἰπαι αν πε νοι ιηνεγαφη καλας (IV 157)
   {NB: ινοι = ινοι}
8. ηκοηννια ετακη εβολ πε ύωπε ρηπειοηωην νηγωτ (IV 172)
9. νετεπεγουγουη πε σωογ ηεογη ιενεξημα γιακαμας (Ch. 86)
10. τεφυκει ιεηεοουη πε ογαογ ιναπωςης αγω τεγυκει
    αη πε εογαογ ιναπουγουη (Ch. 56)
11. ἰπαςκ αν εβολ ιηνομος πε τιςωτη αλα παςκ εβολ
    ιηνομος πε τιςγερατη ογβεπνπεοου (III 67)
12. χε ρε ιναπαζογ πε χεςγ ινοπ ανααζως εβολ ιηοη (Ch. 122)
   {NB: χε- construct state of αηω}
13. ογημογ ιηνεγαζογ ογορη ιηνογη νετεηηπεζο οηαγ (IV 14)
14. ιναπουηαη ιναπηοι εβολ ερξωτ ιναπουηαη οη ιημοοε
    ετηπρω ωινη δε πε ιετροογ (IV 174)
15. εωηεηγη πε ιεηαι ρηηη πε εσωτη εροο γε εηηη
    ηνοηη πε ααγ (BM Cat. 198)
16. ογημηηρωη οηο ηεαω επαω πε ηαγ ρηεηηξξο (Ch. 183)
17. ογηοτε πε ηαγ εροε εστκη ογραω πε ηαγ εροε
    εκηζο ιηνοε επεκωγ (IV 14)
18. πεοογη αγω πλορογ πε πεςκωγ (IV 15)
19. ογηηηη ναι πε (A I 102)
20. εβωκ μεν εντοπος ινηκαξηρος εσληα εσω εςαλει
eτηκοκ εκεπροςορο ατηεοτη ιηπεκη ιναποηη...εξω
    δε εογηη εςω εςωβε ιαλλον δε επορηεζε αγω
    εστηρωμε ετβεντηζε ιηιηπαλα δαγ ρηξηων ιηηιηη-
    ηνη ηι νηαηνηη ηε (A I 119f.)

[OBS. Note the difference between the masculine resumption in
ιναποηη and the feminine theme in ογηαμηη ηε resuming the
feminine rHEME in the “impersonal” Nominal Sentence]
51 THE INFINITIVE AS OBJECT (governed) or COMPLEMENT OF A VERB

The infinitive occurs as following a verb clause as direct object or
introduced by e- or ἐ- (according to the individual syntax of the
governing verb). When in complement (non-governed, adjunct) status,
the infinitive is introduced by the preposition e- (cf. “to” in “He came
here to see me”)

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
STERN parr. 454; TILL parr. 340-341; VERGOTE parr. 200, 202-204

1. νακω ἡμῶν ἄν εἶ ναι (Cg. 62)
2. ἤπησωμεν ἐογωμ (Ch. 62)
3. πεθανογω ἐκαργῳ ἐβολ ἡμοε (Ch. 63)
4. μιδωμ ἡμοι εαμαςτε (Ch. 63)
5. ἑστιοτι εἀγ (Ch. 82)
6. πεθαρξναγ ἐσωτὶ ἐροογ ἐκαργε ἐροογ ἑἀγ (IV 204)
7. πενταμὶ ἐν Ἠντεςκαρ ἐγονε ἄγων πεςκον ἐκοομ (Ch. 83)
8. ετβεγον Ἡπεκρινε Ἡπαι Ἡγοο ἑτκαχρον Ἡπογον (III 204)
9. Ἠπκεν Ἡετβρωμε (Ch. 28)
10. ἢππρεναρχει Ἡκωρ ἐβολ ... (Ch. 62)
11. ητημωγ ἄν Ἡμογε ἐροι Ἑπεκκωρ Ἡκενογ (IV 132)
12. φωλεν Ἡροκ Ἡμποτ ἐβολ Ἡμο (Ἀ 141)
13. κογεσ-μισ (Ch. 21)
14. Ἡτογεσσοο ἄν (Ch. 68)
15. πενταγκαϊε ἄγω ῥω (III 214)
16. Ἡπαθώχκ ἄρ νῃ Ἑκανερπη Ἡη Ἡποεοεἰς ἄγῳ πεςκ Ἡηἐπαγελοσ ετη Ἡρον Ἡκταρ ηποσκ (Ἀ 1 29)
THIRD PART: ASSORTED UNCLASSIFIED TEXTS
(graded according to difficulty)
THIRD PART:
ASSORTED TEXTS OF ADVANCED SYNTAX
(graded I-III according to difficulty (complexity or extent))

GRADE I

(1) οὐγογειακε καὶ ἔτογεσσαυρον ἄν ἰησοῦς (Ch. 68)
(2) ἰνερεύμε γραὶ ἵζητι ἰακώ ἡθηνάκοτι ἐβολο ἃν ἰατίμοι (IV 82)
(3) ἰεσοοῦν ἄν ἰησοῦν πε πρᾳῳ ἰταφεὶ ἲμα ἰ ἰιεοῦ πε

(4) ἰησοῦν ἰησοῦν ἰεοῦ ἰεοῦ ἰογῷ ἰνατἴτςκεβ ἰαγ
(Wess. 9 162)
(5) οὐ πεσαρίζεοιν ἄα ἰνερεύμε ἵτερετεπλήν ἰῆῳῳ
(Wess. 9 138)
(6) οὐοὶ ἓα οὗ ἰασφρε ἱσεθνυμοῦ ἱνιεννοβε ἰηαπτικεται
(Π 131.6 28 8)
(7) οὐσιτισακε ἐρφονουρε οὐσεθρυκἰν εὐφοοσε (III 195)
[OBS. Note the masculine resumption of the zero-article feminine antecedent]
(8) οὐ πεπνοε ἂ αὐ ὑ πο πασιονε ἱνταχιτυτη ἰβονε

(9) ἰπογοῦ ἄη ἰακάκε ἑβο ἱεμοοοῦ ἄγ ἰγκάκε
πε ἱακεοῦ ἀ ἱἰ ἱεμοοοῦ ἄγ ἱακογοεἰν εὐφ
(Ch. 69)
(10) ὧμ πεταπταμεπρὴν ἱπποο ἱαμοο ὧμοῃ ἰε ὧμῃ ἰε ἰε ἰε (A 1407)
[OBS. The # NOUN — πε # Nominal Sentence “carries on” (resumes) the Cleft Sentence]
(11) ἱαμετὴν ἱεοῦ ἱην ἰεοοὺς ἰεπεγῦς ἑβο ἱεμπροςεὲ ἱογεκασὶ ἱεοῦ ἱμοο ἱεοο ἱεοο Γ
(IV 38)
(12) πίκοεις ἱεοῦ ἱηηετεογον ὧμ ἰγογοεῖς ἄη ἰαγ ἱ δηνε

(13) ἱετολι ἰεοοὐς ὧ ο ἱεγογολο ἱαγρα ἱεογεγεβίω
ἰαὶ ἱπταμήκακε ἱεοῦ ἱδηπεγῦς ἱατςκε β θνοῦ ἱε ἱε ἱε ἱαγρα (E 84)
(14) εὐσταθὸν γνωστὶ με επεταγμαν ἐρωτ ζεκας εὐμε-  

(15) νοε γαρ ὑμετέραμπτες διώμυ πετ 

(16) πεταματες εὐπρονοι. ἡμᾶς ἐρωτοντον ἑαυτῶν ἐπτομὰ. 

(17) ἡμᾶς ἡμέτερος ἐκοιμάς αὐς ἑκατὼρ 

(18) μελλοὶ ἱερὸν ἀγίας εὐτεμήσωσαι. 

(19) μοιμως μνήμι εβολ ἡμῶν αὐς ἁντακχος ἐρωτο ἐξε- 

(20) κτητοθον. ἐπεφάνετο ἡμῖν (Ε. 67) 

(21) ἡμῖν μνήμως ἑρωστειφίλα 

(22) μνήμωσις (Wess. 9 171) 

(23) ὁγιψτικὰ (Ch. 24) 

(24) ἁγιαστειφίλοι 

(25) ἁγιαστειφίλοι (RE 11 117) 

(26) ἀρχαγιστειφίλοι (Ch. 69) 

(27) εἰσαγωγιστειφίλοι (IV 113) 

GRADE II 

(1) τῷσπομος ἡτοοτοσ ἱερεσις 

(2) ἱερεσις ἡνια 

(3) ἱερεσις ἡνια
ψωγ τῆς ου τειχος τες γηγλας αγω τηιρε 

(4) μηηρψε εογηητήενξεισσογε ηνκσκ εαογσ χαροσ εξει 

(5) γενηβαρανος γεσκοοε γεσκδας ηνπηηρα 

(6) ουρψε πετεογιηαη ηνκσν ησηρε ιαη 

(7) ηντω ειξσω ηντοκ εξερσθρ ηνπεκρηοεισσονε φακ εκ 

(8) ηνπεκχοος ηεξηταηοοη λνοκ ηεκασ εηηπερησηη υηλαξηρηοο 

(9) ερεσμαν ερο ηπρο ηηπηγε ηνκασ ηηπκατρεγουοη ηνρα 

(10) ηνηε γαρ ετεσξγαηοογε ησεσηη κατηηοο ηηδηζη 

(11) πααξε δορη εερψμε ηηεκρασ εαοογσ ηεξεξψνα -
THIRD PART

πάτα ἰμοὶ εὐγνωμον ἐς ἑσυγήγηται μὴνομεντανκτοῦ ἡμῖνδοι τούτος ὁμοομένοις ἔργωρίᾳ ἀλλὰ φιλανθρωπίᾳ εὐτελείᾳ οὐκ ἀλλὰ εὐτελείᾳ ὑπερτηθεὶ (IV 166)

(12) εἰσαγωγή εἰς ἐκκατοντάτης ἑπτάνων Ἰωάννης ἐν εὐγνωμον ἐκκατερεπτοποιεῖ τὸν ὑποτήτας τοῦ εὐγνωμον ἐκκατερεπτοποιεῖ τὸν ἱμητερίαν τρὶσ (A 1 207)

(13) σὺνὶ ἄγων μνημεῖσθε ἡμέραν ἑπτάνων ἡμέραν ἄγων εὐτελεῖαν ἑπτάνων ἡμέραν τὰ ὑποτήτας αὐτὸν περιστερεῖται τῇ ἐραούς ἑκατερεπτοποιεῖ ἑκατοντάτης ἑμοὶ ἑπτάνων ἑπτάνων εὐτελεῖαν ἑπτάνων τῷ εὐτελείᾳ καὶ ἑπτάνων (A 1 234)

(14) ἔναυστεροὺς ἐνεόγυμνον ἐν οὐκ ἔναι ἑπτάνων ἀναγνωρίζεται ἑπτάνων ἡμέρας περιστερεῖται τῷ ἐκατερεπτοποιεῖ τῇ ἀναγνωρίζεται τῷ ἑκατοντάτης τῷ ἑκατοντάτης (IV 176)

(15) οὐ πετεύεσθαι εἰς εὑροῦν ἐν ποιήσεων ἐμφάτακτον ἑπτάνων ἑπτάνων τῇ ἐπεξεργάσει ἐν ἐν καὶ ἑπτάνων τῇ ἐπεξεργάσει ἐν ἑπτάνων (Or. 157f.)

(16) ἀναγνωρίζεται ἐναι ἔναυστερος ἐναγνωρίζεται ἑπτάνων ἐπομον ἑπτάνων ἑπτάνων ἑπτάνων ἑπτάνων ἑπτάνων (III 182f.)

(17) ἀναγνωρίζεται ἐναγνωρίζεται ἑπτάνων ἑπτάνων ἑπτάνων ἑπτάνων ἑπτάνων ἑπτάνων ἑπτάνων ἑπτάνων (III 140)

(18) ἐνάντια ἐπεξεργάσει ἐναγνωρίζεται ἐπεξεργάσει ἐπεξεργάσει ἐπεξεργάσει ἐπεξεργάσει ἐπεξεργάσει ἐπεξεργάσει (P 131.5 128 vo)

(19) ἀναγκαίου ἀναγκαίου ἀναγκαίου ἀναγκαίου ἀναγκαίου ἀναγκαίου ἀναγκαίου ἀναγκαίου ἀναγκαίου ἀναγκαίου (IV 38f.)

(20) ἐναποκεκεκτομεμικτοι ἐπεξεργάσει ἐπεξεργάσει ἐπεξεργάσει (Wess. 9 180)

(21) μὴ ἐποίημεν ἐπεξεργάσει (Wess. 9 171)

(22) ὁμονοματεργασία ἐποίημεν ἐπεξεργάσει ἐποίημεν ἐπεξεργάσει ἐποίημεν ἐπεξεργάσει ἐποίημεν ἐπεξεργάσει ἐπεξεργάσει ἐπεξεργάσει ἐπεξεργάσει ἐπεξεργάσει (IV 120)
(23) ἰανογυποκτετεῖσθαι μετὰ εὐθυγραμμίας τῆς ἐπιπλεκτικῆς ἔναξιατικῆς ἰδιότητας τιτλοποίησε τόθετο τῆς ἐπιμηκτικῆς ἑπιμηκτικῆς ἔργου 

[OBS. εὐτί-, εὐτί- are variant forms of the negated conditional, for the usual εὐτάστ-, εὐτάστ-]

**GRADE III**

(1) καλ λως δὲ εὐγοςπαγενεβιω εἰσὶ γαρ ἡμεσμε ἦμερ 

(2) μὴ εκεσι ὁτῳ εταςκῳνήει ἡμεντο εὐθαλ ἢπνοητε 

(3) οὐβαλ γαρ ἢπνοητρος εὐθαρε ἢπνονδα ἢπακε 

(4) εὐκοόγνυν ἑβίκευςκας ἡευρημενα ἐνῃκατ 

(5) εὐτάσταντιμοοταυμεν εὐθαλ γερμι 

(6) εὐβενεί εὐκαθαρεῖε ἐπαχα ἢπιεκα 

(7) οὐ γαρ πετερενδοεἰς πνοητε χειεοοῦ ἤρητι ἂν ἐπιπ 

ASSORTED UNCLASSIFIED TEXTS 163
τω ετω ητακαερτος πνεαιγωνη ετθαι καιεινης 
επεση πεκε αικεπκαεια τεθογ ηεκκενος ετθον 
επομεν ηγεμωνι ηηγοδω χλεηηναηη χλην 
τηνον ζηημηπαηη δηαηον ιεαηον 
(Ch. 115)

(9) ε ομην ημεξη ομενα 

(10) εεκεηρηοη ιοηηοη ηηοηοη 

(11) πεηαη ιηηιηηηηοοηη εηκοης 

(12) εηηονηοος επηεργαι 

(Ch. 62f.) 

(Ch. 123f.) 

(Ch. 42) 

(Ch. 164f.)
εύσπις τναώτικη εν ευρεσίγνωσι ἁμωτική οτωτική επις ταρος εἰς παν νης επεχείκε ἱε στης (Ch. 94)
(13) τδεευ τετετεθηκείε χειεςογωνίον ἁμαρτι σερτικής προς αυς ευρεσίγνωσι ετετεθηκείς κετεηθηκείς ηπηκηθε πραγματε ευγους εἰς ταῖς ὡς ὑπάτης ὑπετανθηκείς ετετεθηκείς ευρεσίγνωσι επεκεερηκείς ταγοικες σημαντικαι 
(14) ησιοτατε γαρ ετεσικλακστο εγοις ἁγιοται πανητεκοντος ευρις κοινος ἁγιοται κυπετεκλακστον ευρις κοινος 
(15) σαμασατε εκεχοντα εκεχοντα ων ενεκασας αυς αμενημεν 
(16) αποστελεθηκαθειον μεγαλεσιματε ετεσικλακστον ευρις κοινος 

(Ch. 97f.)
(Ch. 23f.)
(Ch. 10 161)

...
ΤΡΙΤΗ ΤΟΜΗ

...
TABLES

NB: "X-" or "X-" mean: "X is prefixed to the following element (either noun or demonstrative, indefinite, interrogative or number pronoun; or suffix-pronoun, respectively);
"-X" means: "X is suffixed to the preceding element";
"-X-" means: "X is infixed between elements".

Table A: Pronouns; Determiners: Articles, Demonstratives; Personal Pronouns
Table B: Nominal-Sentence Patterns
Table C: the Base ("Tripartite") Conjugation
Table D: the Causative Conjugation
Table E: Existential and Possessive Statements
Table F: the Durative Conjugation
Table G: the Converters
Table H: the Adjective Verbs
Table I: Lexical Verb Morphology: Infinitive/stative Formal Classes
### Table A

#### PRONOUNS: Determinators: Articles, Demonstratives, Personal Pronouns

**A1. ARTICLES:**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>definite</th>
<th>indefinite</th>
<th>zero (generic, abstract, quality)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(&quot;the&quot;)</td>
<td>(&quot;a&quot;, &quot;some&quot;)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

- singular, masc.  \( \pi/-\pi\-\) \(\gamma\)   
- singular, fem.   \( \tau/-\tau\-\) \(\gamma\)   
- plural, masc. + fem. \( \eta/-\eta\-\) \(\varepsilon\-\)

**A2. DEMONSTRATIVES**

- "this one" "this---" "that one" "that---" (emotional)

- singular, masc. \( \pi\-\) \(\pi\-\) \(\pi\-\) \(\pi\-\)
- singular, fem. \( \tau\-\) \(\tau\-\) \(\tau\-\) \(\tau\-\)
- plural, masc. + fem. \( \eta\-\) \(\eta\-\) \(\eta\-\) \(\eta\-\)

- ("these", "those")

**A3. POSSESSIVE ARTICLES**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>possessed:</th>
<th>possessed:</th>
<th>possessed:</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>masc.</td>
<td>fem.</td>
<td>plural (masc. + fem.)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

- possessor:
  - 1st sgl. ("my-") \( \pi\-\) \(\tau\-\) \(\eta\-\)
  - 2nd sgl. masc. ("your-") \( \pi\-\) \(\tau\-\) \(\eta\-\)
    - fem. ("your-") \( \pi\-\) \(\tau\-\) \(\eta\-\)
  - 3rd sgl. masc. ("his-") \( \pi\-\) \(\tau\-\) \(\eta\-\)
    - fem. ("her-") \( \pi\-\) \(\tau\-\) \(\eta\-\)
  - 1st plur. ("our-") \( \pi\-\) \(\tau\-\) \(\eta\-\)
  - 2nd plur. ("your-") \( \pi\-\) \(\tau\-\) \(\eta\-\)
  - 3rd plur. ("their-") \( \pi\-\) \(\tau\-\) \(\eta\-\)
### A4. POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Possessor:</th>
<th>Possessed:</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st sgl. (“mine”)</td>
<td>πψι</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd sgl. masc. (“yours”)</td>
<td>πψκ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fem. (“your”)</td>
<td>πψ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd sgl. masc. (“his”)</td>
<td>πψγ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fem. (“hers”)</td>
<td>πψγ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st plur. (“ours”)</td>
<td>πψν</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd plur. (“yours”)</td>
<td>πψττν</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd plur. (“theirs”)</td>
<td>πψογ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Noun possessor</td>
<td>πα-</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(“he/she/they of”): e.g. παννογτε “he of (belonging/pertaining to) God”, τανακον “she of (belonging/pertaining to) my brother”, μαντε “they of (belonging/pertaining to) Heaven”.

### A5. PERSONAL PRONOUNS

**Class (a): “Suffix-Pronouns”**

(pronominal actor-expression in base conjugation; pronominal object after infinitive; pronom following prepositions; subject of Adjective Verbs).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st person (“I, me”):</td>
<td>-ί(-), -τ*</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd person (“you”):</td>
<td>-κ(-) (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>-ττ(-), -ττττ(-), -ττττττ*</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>-θ(-), -ε* -τε* (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd person</td>
<td>-ογ(-) (masc.: “he, him”)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>-ογ -γ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>-κ(-) (fem.: “she, her”)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>(masc./fem.: “they, them”)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* -τ, -ε/-τε follow consonants and (“κακτ”) doubled vowels; -ττττττ final τ and the pronominal form of the infinitive as well as some prepositions.*
Class (a): **OBJECTIVE PRONOUNS**
(pronominal *possessed* after possession verboid, see Table E; pronominal object after certain irregular infinitives, e.g. **c₂₄₁** "write").

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2nd person (&quot;you&quot;)</td>
<td>(masc.) -κ</td>
<td>(masc./fem. &quot;them&quot;) -c, -cε, -cγ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>(fem.) -ε</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd person:</td>
<td>(masc. &quot;him&quot;) -q</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>(fem. &quot;her&quot;) -ε</td>
<td>(masc./fem. &quot;them&quot;)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Class (b): **PREFIX PRONOUNS**
(pronominal *actor* in the durative conjugation pattern (present, future & modifier predication):

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st person (&quot;I&quot;, &quot;we&quot;)†</td>
<td><strong>τ́ṇ-</strong></td>
<td><strong>τ́ṇ-</strong> (masc. + fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd person (&quot;you&quot;)</td>
<td><strong>κ-</strong> (masc.)</td>
<td><strong>τ́ṇ-</strong> (masc. + fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><strong>τ̣e-</strong> (fem.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd person</td>
<td><strong>q-</strong> (masc. &quot;he&quot;)</td>
<td><strong>c̣-</strong> (masc. + fem. &quot;they&quot;)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><strong>c̣-</strong> (fem. &quot;she&quot;)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Class (c): **SUBJECT PRONOUNS**: pronominal "logical subject" (theme) with nominal predicates.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st person (&quot;I am-&quot;)</td>
<td><strong>ἀṇ-</strong></td>
<td><strong>ἀṇ(ṇ)-, ἀνον-</strong> (&quot;we are-&quot;)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd person (&quot;you are-&quot;)</td>
<td><strong>ṇτ̣-</strong> (masc.)</td>
<td><strong>ṇτ̣-</strong> (masc. + fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><strong>ṇτ̣e-</strong> (fem.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd person</td>
<td><strong>-τ̣e</strong> (masc. &quot;he is-&quot;)</td>
<td><strong>-ṇe</strong> (masc. + fem. &quot;they are-&quot;)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><strong>-τ̣e</strong> (fem. &quot;she is-&quot;)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Class (d): **Lexical** ("independent") **Pronouns**

(lexemes for "I, you (masculine singular, feminine singular, masc./fem. plural), he, she, we, they"; also as personal-pronoun *predicates* in the delocutive Nominal Sentence).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st person (&quot;I&quot;)</td>
<td><strong>ἈΝΟΚ</strong></td>
<td><strong>ἈΝΟΝ</strong> (&quot;we&quot;)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd person (&quot;you&quot;)</td>
<td><strong>ἍΤΟΚ</strong> (masc.)</td>
<td><strong>ἍΤΩΤΝ</strong> (masc. + fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><strong>ἍΤΟ</strong> (fem.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd person (&quot;he&quot;)</td>
<td><strong>ἍΤΟΩ</strong> (masc.)</td>
<td><strong>ἍΤΟΟΥ</strong> (masc. + fem., &quot;they&quot;)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><strong>ἍΤΟΣ</strong> (fem.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note the morphology of the 1st-person pronouns: **ἈΝΟΚ**, **ἈΝΟΝ** — different from all others (**ἍΤΟ** + suffix-pronoun).
TABLE B

NOMINAL-SENTENCE PATTERNS

B1. The Interlocutive (1st/2nd person) Pattern

αντ-πεαυμα "I am his servant", ἤτε-οὐτήνα "You are a spirit"

Pattern: # 1st/2nd person pronominal subject – predicate #
Subject: interlocutive (1st-2nd persons) pronouns (A5, class c)
Predicate: definite, indefinite noun (not demonstrative, proper name, or zero-determinated noun)
Negation pattern: # (ἡ-) subject – predicate + ἄν #
Conversion: circumstantial: ε + pattern ("I/you being...")
preterite: ἦ + pattern ("I was.../You were...")
Topicalized subject: # ἄνοκας αντ- Predicate # (etc.)

B2a. The Delocutive (3rd person) Pattern

παῖως πε "He is my brother", οὐγενενός τε "She is a virgin",
ναί νε "It is these", ἄνοκας πε "It is I"

Pattern: # predicate – 3rd person pronominal subject #
Subject: delocutive (3rd persons) pronouns (singular πε (m.), τε (f.); plural ἦς: A5, class c)
Predicate: definite, indefinite, zero-det. noun; Proper Name; personal, demonstrative, interrogative, indefinite pronouns
Negation pattern: # (ἡ-) predicate + ἄν + subject #
Conversion: circumstantial: ε + pattern ("Whereas he/she/they is/are...")
relative: ετε + pattern ("Who, which is/are...")
preterite: ἦ + pattern ("He/she/they was/were...")

B2b. The Expanded Delocutive Pattern

οὐςαθανος πε πνούτε "good is (He,) God", οὐ τε τεμελησιν "what is (it,) our hope?" ταὶ τε θε "this is (it,) the manner" ("thus")
**Pattern**: # predicate – pronominal subject - nominal subject #
This is B2a, expanded: the nominal subject renders the pronominal (formal or "grammatical") one lexically explicit. (Other features are the same as for B2a)

**B2c. The Topicalization De locutive Pattern**

πνογε το γα αθον πε "(As for) God, He is good", ναί γεν περ εϕ –


nothe πε "(As for) these, they are sinners"

**Pattern**: # noun/pronoun topic – predicate – pronominal subject #

The topic presents an element familiar from the preceding text or beyond it as the basis on which the predicate is communicated; the pronominal subject refers back to the topic, and agrees with it in gender and number.

Features as for B2a, except for conversions, which are rare.

NB (negation pattern): # topic - (ν-) predicate + άν + pronominal subject #

**B3. The Copular Pattern**

πελαιγκτε πε ρωμε "Their god is man", περικε πε παληογ "His name is Paul, anok πε παληοχα “I am Gabriel”: an equational-identifying predication clause (S = P)

**Pattern**: # subject - copula - predicate

**Subject**: definite (very rarely indefinite/zero-determined) noun, personal or demonstrative pronoun

**Predicate**: proper name, definite/indefinite/zero-determined noun (especially infinitives)

**Copula**: τε (τε) (νε) (πε generalized)

**Negation pattern**: # ν- subject + άν + copula – predicate #

**Conversion**: circumstantial: ε + pattern ("S being P")
relative: ετε + pattern ("Whose S is P")
preterite: νε + pattern ("S was P")
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>subject</th>
<th>SIMPLE</th>
<th>EXPANDED</th>
<th>TOPICALIZED</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>INTERLOCUTIVE</td>
<td>“Ωνή-Π”</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>“Ωνοκ, Ωνή-Π”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(&quot;I am; we, you are&quot;)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DELOCUTIVE</td>
<td>“Π πε”</td>
<td>“Π πε, Σ”</td>
<td>“Σ, Π πε”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(&quot;he, she is, they are&quot;)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
**TABLE C**

**THE BASE ("TRIPARTITE") CONJUGATION**

A verb-clause pattern set, combining *actor* with *verb phrase*.

*actor*: suffix-pronoun, Proper Name or noun/demonstrative, indefinite, interrogative pronouns

*verb*: base discontinuously combined with any infinitive (here represented by Ꞵωτῑ “hear”)

(1) The main-sentence conjugation

*Distinctive properties*: (a) all are independent clauses, (b) all are completely or partly convertible, (c) all are negated by special negative bases.

C(I)I. The Perfect: Ꞵ.getJSONArray “ ITERATIVE ꞴJSONArray ”

(a) **Affirmative base:**

 이렇 ꞴJSONArray “He heard, has heard”

“he/ the man heard”

“after he/ the man had heard”, “... and he/ the man heard”

*Relative*

(¢e) ꞴJSONArray “who heard, has heard”, “whom, whose ... he/ the man heard, has heard”

*Second Tense*

¢e ꞴJSONArray “It is ... that he/ the man heard, has heard”

*Preterite*

¢e ꞴJSONArray “He/ the man had heard”

(b) **Negative base:**

¢e ꞴJSONArray “He did not hear, has not heard”

¢e ꞴJSONArray “The man did not hear, has not heard”
Conversions:
CIRCUMSTANTIAL
(c-)/e-... cωτή “unless, if not he/the man heard, has heard”, “he/the man not having chosen”
RELATIVE
eτε-ηπ-/eτε-ηπ-... cωτή “who did not hear, has not heard”, “whom, whose … he/the man did not hear, has not heard”
SECOND TENSE (rare)
eτε-ηπ-/eτε-ηπ-... cωτή “It is … that he/the man did not hear, has not heard”
PRETERITE
ηε-ηπ-/ηε-ηπ-... cωτή “He/the man had not heard”

C(1)2. THE AORIST: “ψας cωτή” “μες cωτή”

(a) affirmative base:
ψα-ψ cωτή “He (usually, by nature, by disposition, as consequence) hears”
ψαρε-πρωμε cωτή “The man (usually, by nature, by disposition, as consequence hears)”

Conversions:
CIRCUMSTANTIAL.
c-/eψ-/e-ψαρ-... cωτή (after indefinite/zero det. noun, as relative)
RELATIVE
eτε-/eψ-/eψαρ-... cωτή “who (usually ...) hears”, “whom, whose … he/the man (usually ...) hears”
SECOND TENSE
e-ψαρ-/ψαρ-... cωτή “It is … that he/the man (usually ...) hears”
PRETERITE
ηε-ψα-/ψαρ-... cωτή “He/the man used to hear”

(b) Negative base:
με-ψ cωτή “He does not (usually ...) hear, cannot hear”
μερε-πρωμε cωτή “The man does not (usually ...) hear, cannot hear”
Conversions:
CIRCUMSTANTIAL:

ε-νε-η/νερε-...σωτη

"while he/the man does not (usually ...), cannot hear"

RELATIVE

ετε-ε-νε-η/νερε-...σωτη

"who does not (usually ...), cannot hear", "whom, whose ... he/the man does not (usually ...), cannot hear"

PRETERITE

νε-νε-η/νερε-...σωτη

"He/the man could not, used not to hear"

C(1)3. "NOT YET": "ἵπατηςωτη"

Base:

ἵπατης-η-ςωτη

"He has not yet heard"

ἵπατε-πρωμε-ςωτη

"The man has not yet heard"

Conversions:

CIRCUMSTANTIAL:

ε-νε-εη/ε-νεπατε-...σωτη

"before he/the man has heard" (usually preceded by the adverb ἀληθινον "before")

RELATIVE:

ετε-ἵπατης-ετε-ἵπατε-...σωτη

"who has not yet heard", "whom, whose ... he/the man has not yet heard"

PRETERITE:

νε-ἵπατης-νε-ἵπατε-...σωτη

"He/the man had not yet heard"

C(1)4. THE OPTATIVE ("THIRD FUTURE"): "εσεωτη" "ἵπετη-

σωτη"

(a) Affirmative base:

ε-εη-ε-ςωτη

"May he hear" (3rd persons).

ἐρε-πρωμε-ςωτη

"Would you hear" (2nd persons)

"May the man hear"
Conversions: none

Following αε and αεκα(λ)ε: clauses of purpose or willed result: "... so that he (may) hear"

(b) Negative base:

- *ανε = q·cwτُم*  “May he not hear”, "He shall not hear"
- *ανε-πρωμε cwτُم*  "I will not hear"
- *ανε-πρωμε cwτُم*  "May the man not hear", "The man shall not hear"

Conversions:

Circumstantial.

- (ε-)ανε- ... cwτُم* rare, only after αεκα(λ)ε in clauses of purpose.

Following αε and αεκα(λ)ε in clauses of purpose or willed result: "... so that he may not hear"

(II) The dependent-clause conjugation:

Distinctive features: (a) all are dependent clauses, (b) all are non-convertible, (c) all are negated by the negative infix -τُم- preceding the infinitive (for a pronominal actor) or the actor (nominal actor).

C(II)1. "Until": "*맛َق cwτُم*

Base:

- *맛َق cwτُم*  "until he hear (heard)"
- *맛َتَcwτُم*  "until the man hear (heard)"

C(II)2. The Temporal: "*نيَرِق cwτُم*

Base:

- *نيَرِق cwτُم*  "after, since he/the man heard"
- *نيَرِق cwτُم*  "after, since he did not hear"
- *نيَرِق cwτُم*  "after, since the man did not hear"
C(II)3. The Conditional: \( \varepsilon \varphi \nu \alpha \nu \chi \omega \tau \nu \bar{\eta} \)

**Base:**

\( \varepsilon - \eta - \varphi \nu \alpha \nu - \chi \omega \tau \nu \bar{\eta} \) \( “if (ever), in case, when(ever), (eventually) he hears” \)

\( \varepsilon \varphi \nu \alpha \nu - \pi \rho \omega \mu \varepsilon \chi \omega \tau \nu \bar{\eta} \) \( “if (ever), in case, when(ever) (eventually) the man hears” \)

**Negative forms:**

\( \varepsilon - \eta - \varphi \nu \alpha \nu - \tau \bar{\eta} - \chi \omega \tau \nu \bar{\eta} \) \( “if (ever)... he does not hear” \)

\( \varepsilon \varphi \nu \alpha \nu - \tau \bar{\eta} - \pi \rho \omega \mu \varepsilon \chi \omega \tau \nu \bar{\eta} \) \( “if (ever)... the man does not hear” \)

The Conditional is often preceded by adverb \( \kappa \alpha \nu \) which marks a CONCESSIVE meaning (“even if ..., although”)

C(II)4. The Conjunctive: \( \nu \varphi \chi \omega \tau \nu \bar{\eta} \)

**Base:** with PRONOMINAL actor: \( \eta - \) with special pronominal forms

with NOMINAL actor: \( \tilde{n} \tau e - \)

**Pronominal forms:**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SINGULAR</th>
<th>PLURAL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st person</td>
<td>( \tilde{n} \tau e - ), ( \tau \bar{\alpha} - )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd person</td>
<td>masc. ( \nu \bar{\eta} - ), fem. ( \tilde{n} \tau c - )</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd person</td>
<td>masc. ( \nu \bar{\eta} - ), fem. ( \bar{n} \bar{\epsilon} - )</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Negative forms:** PRONOMINAL actor: \( \eta - \tilde{n} - \tau \bar{\eta} - \chi \omega \tau \nu \bar{\eta} \)

NOMINAL actor: \( \tilde{n} \tau e - \tau \bar{\eta} - \pi \rho \omega \mu \varepsilon \chi \omega \tau \nu \bar{\eta} \)

The conjunctive: (1) CONTINUES A PRECEDING VERB FORM (normally not present, perfect or imperfect) as a special closely coordinated (“and”) verb sequence; (2) occurs after CONJUNCTIONS and ADVERBS of Greek origin, especially \( \zeta \omega c t e \) “so that”, negative \( \mu \nu \nu \nu \varepsilon \), \( \mu \nu \nu \omega c \): \( \epsilon \iota \iota \iota \iota \iota \) “otherwise”, \( \mu o r i c \) “hardly”.
TABLE D

THE CAUSATIVE CONJUGATION

D1. THE CAUSATIVE INFINITIVE: “ΤΡΕΨΣΩΤΗ”

In conjugation:

τρε-σε-σωτή
τρε-πρωμε σωτή “to make (/let) him/the man hear”

After prepositions:

e-τρεσσωτή/e-τρεπρωμε σωτή “for him/the man to hear”,
“that he (should) hear” or “so as to let him/the man hear”

D2. THE CAUSATIVE IMPERATIVE (“JUSSIVE”, “THIRD-PERSON-IMPERATIVE”): “ΜΑΡΕΨΣΩΤΗ”

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SINGULAR</th>
<th>PLURAL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st person</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>negative:</td>
<td>Ἰππ-τρε-σωτή “let us hear”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd person</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>negative:</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd person masc.</td>
<td>Μαρεσ-σωτή “let him hear”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>negative:</td>
<td>Ηππ-τρες-σωτή “let him not hear”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd person fem.</td>
<td>Μαρες-σωτή “let her hear”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>negative:</td>
<td>Ηππ-τρες-σωτή “let her not hear”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>masc. + fem.</td>
<td>Μαρογ-σωτή “let them hear”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>negative</td>
<td>Ηππ-τρεγ-σωτή “let them not hear”</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### TABLES

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SINGULAR</th>
<th>PLURAL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>1st person</strong></td>
<td><strong>2nd person</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>masc. $\text{ταρεκ-σωτή}$</td>
<td>masc. $\text{ταρεκ-σωτή}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fem. $\text{ταρεκ-σωτή}$</td>
<td>fem. $\text{ταρεκ-σωτή}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>masc. + fem. $\text{ταρεκ-σωτή}$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>“shall we hear?”</td>
<td>“...and you shall hear”</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**D3. THE FUTURE (“CAUSATIVE”) CONJUNCTIVE:** “$\text{ταρεκ-σωτή}$”

This form expresses the guaranteed result of obeying a command, also general guaranteed (desirable) result. In the first persons, it expresses a deliberative question.
TABLE E

EXISTENTIAL AND POSSESSIVE STATEMENTS

E1. THE EXISTENTIAL STATEMENTS:

ογν- “There is” (with indefinite noun/pronoun, number nouns, zero-det. noun or determinated relative (πετ-)

ΜΜν-, Μν- “There is not” (with indefinite noun/pronoun, zero-deter-

minated noun or determinated relative (πετ-)

Conversions:

CIRCUMSTANTIAL:

ε-ογν-ε-(Μ)Μν- (ΜΜν-) “there being/not being”

RELATIVE:

ετε-ογν-/ετε-(Μ)Μν- “whose ..., ... whom there is/is not”

SECOND TENSE (rare):

c-ογν-/εμν- “It is ... that there is/is not”

PRETERITE:

νε-ογν-/νε-(Μ)Μν- “There was/was not”

NB: for the EXISTENTIAL DURATIVE PREDICATION, see TABLE F.

Ela ειε-, ειε-γκε “Here is ...”, with nouns and lexical pronouns.

E2. THE POSSESSION VERBOIDS: ογνταq “He has”

(M)Mntaq “He does not have”

PRONOMINAL POSSESSOR:

SINGULAR POSSESSOR PLURAL POSSESSOR

1st person ογντ(λ)ι neg. (Μ)Μnt(λ)ι ογνταν neg. (Μ)Μntαν
(“I/We have, do not have”)

2nd person, masc. ογντ(λ)κ neg. (Μ)Μnt(λ)κ

fem. ογντε neg. (Μ)Μntε

(“You have, do not have”) masc. + fem. ογντετ(λ)/(Μ)Μntετ(λ)
3rd person masc. **οὐντ(α)q** neg. (ритор**)μντ(α)q**
   fem. **οὐντ(α)c** neg. (ритор**)μντ(α)c**
("He/She has, does not have")
("They have, do not have") masc. **οὐντ(α)γ/**(ритор**)μντ(α)γ**

**Nominal, demonstrative, indefinite-pronoun possessor:**

**οὐντε-** neg. (ритор**)μντε-** πρωμε** "The man has, does not have"

**Possessed:** nouns, demonstrative, indefinite pronouns; personal pronouns (the objective pronouns. **Table A5 Class a1**)

**Conversions:**

**Circumstantial:**

**ε-οὐντα-/ε-οὐντε-** neg. **ε-μντα-/εμντε-**(ритор**)μντα-/εμντε-**
"he/the man having, not having"

**Relative:**

**ετε-οὐντα-/ετε-οὐντε-** neg. **ετε(ритор**)μντα-/ετε(ритор**)μντε-**
"who has, does not have", "whom he/the man has, does not have"

**Second Tense (rare):**

**ε-οὐντα-** neg. **ε-(ритор**)μντα-** "It is... that he/the man has, does not have"

**Preterite**

**νε-οὐντα-/νε-οὐντε-** neg. **νε-(ритор**)μντα-/νε-(ритор**)μντε-** "He/The man had, did not have"
TABLE F

THE DURATIVE CONJUGATION

(THE "BIPARTITE" PATTERN)

Pronominal actor: prefixed pronouns (Table A5 Class b)
Nominal actor: (a) definite noun, demonstrative pronoun or proper
name; (b) existential (οὐν-), negative (ὁμη-) + indefinite, zero noun or
indefinite pronoun
Predicates: the durative infinitive; the stative; stative auxiliary (να-) +
infinite (future tense); adverb phrase

F1. Predicate: DURATIVE INFINITIVE: THE PRESENT TENSE
DURATIVE (PROGRESSIVE) ACTION

PRONOMINAL ACTOR:
†κωτι, κκωτι, τεκωτι ... “I am hearing”; “You are hear-
ing”; “He is hearing” (etc.)
Negatived:
(ὁ)†κωτι άν, υ/κκωτι άν, (ὁ)τεκωτι άν, (ὁ)κ σωτι άν ...
“1 am not hearing”, “You are not hearing”, “He is not hearing” (etc.)

NOMINAL ACTOR:
πρωμε κωτι
ουν-ογρωμε κωτι
ουν-ογρωμε κωτι
“The man is hearing”
“A man is hearing” (existential:
“There is a man hearing”)
“A man is hearing” (existential:
“There is a man hearing”)

Negatived:
(ὁ)πρωμε κωτι άν
(ὁ)μι-ρωμε κωτι
“The man is not hearing”
“No man is hearing” (existential:
“There is not [a] man hearing”)

Conversions:
CIRCUMSTANTIAL:
PRONOMINAL ACTOR:
ε-ικωτι, ε-κκωτι
“I hearing”, “you hearing” (etc.)
Negatived:
ε-ν̣τεωμε cωτ̣η ‘I not hearing’ (etc.)

NOMINAL actor:
ερε-πρ̣ωμε cωτ̣η “the man hearing”
εου̣ν-ογρ̣ωμε cωτ̣η “a man hearing” (existential)

Negatived:
ε-ν̣πρ̣ωμε cωτ̣η άν or ερε-πρ̣ωμε cωτ̣η άν “the man not hearing”,
(ε-·) (ν)μν-ρ̣ωμε cωτ̣η “no man hearing” (existential)

The circumstantial conversion in all forms is also used to expand and describe an indefinite/zero noun or indefinite pronoun: ογρ̣ωμε, εοςεωμε cωτ̣η “a man (who is) hearing”.

RELATIVE: DEFINITE ANTECEDENT ONLY (incl. definite articles, Proper Names and demonstratives; see CIRCUMSTANTIAL for indefinite antecedents)
(a) antecedent = actor of the conjugation form (ετ-/ετε-·):
πρ̣ωμε ετεωμε “the man who is hearing”, π-ετεωμε “he who is hearing”, neg. π(ρ̣ωμε) ετε-ν̣ςεωμε άν/ετ-εωμε άν
(b) antecedent = object/complement of the verbal predicate:

PRONOMINAL actor (ετ-/ετε-·):
πρ̣ωμε ετ·/ετκ-/ετγ- cωτ̣η ιμος “the man whom I am/you are/he is hearing”,
π-ετ·/ετκ-/ετγ- cωτ̣η ιμος “he whom I am/you are/he is hearing”

Negatived: π(ρ̣ωμε) ετε-ν̣τ/-ν̣γ-/ν̣γ- cωτ̣η ιμος άν or π(ρ̣ωμε)
ετ·/ετκ-/ετγ- cωτ̣η ιμος άν “the man/he whom I am/you are/ he is not hearing”

NOMINAL actor (ετε/-ετετε-·):
πρ̣ωμε ετετε-πνουμε cωτ̣η ιμος “the man whom God is hearing”, π-ετετε-πνουμε cωτ̣η ιμος “he whom God is hearing”,
πςωβ ετεου̣ν-ογρ̣ωμε ειρε ιμος “The work which a man is doing” (existential)

Negatived:
π(ρ̣ωμε) ετε-ν̣πνουμε cωτ̣η ιμος άν or π(ρ̣ωμε) ετετε-πνουμε cωτ̣η ιμος άν “the man whom God is not hearing”.
πςωβ ετεμν̣-ρ̣ωμε ειρε ιμος “the work which no man is doing” (existential)
SECOND TENSE:
pronominal actor:
ε-ικωτῆ ... “It is ... that I am hearing” (etc.)

Negatived:
(𝗡)(Ｎ)ε-ικωτѣ ᾧ... “It is not ... that I am hearing” (etc.)

nominal actor:
ἐρε-πρῶμες κωτῆ ... “It is ... that the man is hearing”

Negatived:
(Ｎ) ἐρε-πρῶμες κωτѣ ᾧ... “It is not ... that the man is hearing”

The Second Tense conversion is used to emphasize a constituent of the sentence, most often an adverb phrase.

PRETERITE:
pronominal actor:
ncmp-ικωτῆ (πε) “I was hearing” (etc.)

Negatived:
ncmp-ικωτῆ ᾧ (πε), (very rare) nmp-硃κωτѣ ᾧ (πε) “I was not hearing” (etc.)

nominal actor:
ncmp-πρῶμες κωτѣ (πε) “The man was hearing”

Negatived:
ncmp-πρῶμες κωτѣ ᾧ (πε) “The man was not hearing”

F2. Predicate: STATIVE: THE PRESENT TENSE - PASSIVE STATE, CONDITION OR STATE OF BEING IN THE COURSE OF ACTION

PRONOMINAL actor: *κοτῆ, κκοτѣ, τεκοτѣ, ἱκοτѣ ... “I am chosen”; “You are chosen”; “He is chosen” (etc.)

Negatived: (Ｎ)*κοτѣ ᾧ, Ν-κκοτѣ ᾧ, (Ｎ)τεκοτѣ ᾧ, (Ｎ) ἱκοτѣ ᾧ... “I am not chosen”; “You are not chosen”; “He is not chosen” (etc.)

nominal actor:
πρῶμες κοτѣ “The man is chosen”

ἡγον-ὁγρῶμες κοτѣ “A man is chosen” (existential: “There is a man chosen”)
TABLES

187

Negated:
(M)πρωμε σοτπ ἄν
(N)μη-πρωμε σοτπ
“The man is not chosen”
“No man is chosen” (existential:
“There is no man chosen”)

Conversions:
Circumstantial:
pronominal actor:
ε-ισοτπ, ε-κοτπ ... “I being chosen”, “you being
chosen” (etc.)
Negated:
ε-ντεροτπ ἄν or ε-ισοτπ ἄν “I not being chosen” (etc.)
nominal actor:
ερε-πρωμε σοτπ “the man being chosen”
εογη-ογρωμε σοτπ “a man being chosen” (existential)
Negated:
e-μπρωμε σοτπ ἄν or ερε-πρωμε σοτπ ἄν “the man not
being chosen”,
(e-τ) (M)μη-πρωμε σοτπ “no man being chosen” (existential)

The circumstantial conversion in all forms is also used to expand and
describe an indefinite/zero noun or indefinite pronoun: ογρωμε
eπσοτπ “a man (who is) chosen”.

Relative: definite antecedent only (incl. definite articles, Proper
Names and demonstratives; see circumstantial for indef. antecedents)

(a) antecedent = actor of the conjugation form (eτ-/ετε-): πρωμε
ετοτπ “the man who is chosen”, π-ετοτπ “he who is chosen”,
eg. π(πρωμε) ετε-ηοτπ ἄν/ετ-ετότπ ἄν
(b) antecedent = complement of the verbal predicate:
pronominal actor (eτ-/ετε-):
πρωμε ετ-ητκ-/ετκ-ετοτπ (εβολα γιτοτΩ) “the man (by)
whom I am/you are/he is chosen”, π-ετ-/ετκ-/ετκ-ετοτπ (εβολα
γιτοτΩ) “the man (by) whom I am/you are/he is chosen”
Negated:
π(πρωμε) ετε-ητκ-/ηκ-/ηκ-ετοτπ ἄν (εβολα γιτοτΩ) or π(πρωμε)
eτ-/ετκ-/ετκ-ετοτπ ἄν (εβολα γιτοτΩ) “the man/he ... whom I
am/you are/he is not chosen”
nominal actor (eτε-/ετερε-):
πρωμε ετερε-τεκτίμε σοτπ (εβολα γιτοτΩ) “the man (by)
whom the woman is chosen", π-ἐτερε-τεκτίμε κοτπ (ἐβολ ژیتووتق) "he whom the woman is chosen"
Negatived:
προπε ἐτε-πτεκτίμε κοτπ ἂν (ἐβολ ژیتووتق) or προπε ἐτερε-τεκτίμε κοτπ ἂν (ἐβολ ژیتووتق) "the man (by) whom the woman is not chosen”.

Second Tense:

pronounal actor:
ε-ἰκοτπ ... “It is... that I am chosen” (etc.)
Negatived:
(.createTextNode("n\n\n")ε-ἰκοτπ ἂν...
"It is not... that I am chosen”
(etc.)

nominal actor:
επε-προπε κοτπ ... “It is... that the man is chosen”
Negatived:
(.createTextNode("n\n\n")επε-προπε κοτπ ἂν...
"It is not... that the man is chosen”

The Second Tense conversion is used to emphasize a constituent of the sentence, most often an adverb phrase.

Preterite:

pronounal actor:
νε-ἰκοτπ (πε) “I was chosen” (etc.)
Negatived:

νε-ἰκοτπ ἂν (πε) “I was not chosen” (etc.)

nominal actor:
νεπε-προπε κοτπ (πε) “The man was chosen”
Negatived:

νεπε-προπε κοτπ ἂν (πε) “The man was not chosen”

F3. Predicate: STATIVE AUXILIARY + INFINITIVE: PRESENT-BASED (imminent) FUTURE

pronounal actor:
τνακωτπ, κνακωτπ, τενακ-
ωτπ, κνακωτπ ... “I’ll hear” ("I am going/about
to hear"); “You’ll hear”; “He’ll hear” (etc.)
Negatived:

(NSMutable an, nē-/knacwthī "I'll not hear" ("I am not going an, ( NSMutable an, ( NSMutable to hear"); "You'll not hear": cswthī an... "He'll not hear" (etc.)

Nominal actor:

ᴘʀᴡᴍᴇ ɴᴀᴄᴡᴛʰī "The man'll hear"
ᴏᴜʏɴ-ᴏʏʀᴡᴍᴇ ɴᴀᴄᴡᴛʰī "A man'll hear" (existential:
"There's a man about to hear")

Negatived:

(NSMutable an
(NSMutable an "The man'll not hear"
(NSMutable an "No man'll hear" (existential:
"There isn't a man about to hear")

Conversions:

Circumstantial:

Pronominal actor:

ε-ɪɴᴀᴄᴡᴛʰī "I going/about to hear" (etc.)

Negatived:

ε-ɲnacwthī an or ε-ɪɴᴀᴄᴡᴛʰī an "I not going to hear" (etc.)

Nominal actor:

εε-ᴘʀᴡᴍᴇ ɴᴀᴄᴡᴛʰī "the man going/about to hear"
εɟύɴ-ᴏʏʀᴡᴍᴇ ɴᴀᴄᴡᴛʰī "a man going/about to hear"

Negatived:

ε-ɲpʀᴡᴍᴇ ɴᴀᴄᴡᴛʰī an or εε-ᴘʀᴡᴍᴇ ɴᴀᴄᴡᴛʰī an "the man not going/about to hear"
(ε-)(NSMutable an "no man going/about to hear" (existential)

The circumstantial conversion in all forms is also used to expand and describe an indefinite/zero noun or indefinite pronoun: օɣʀᴡᴍᴇ ɛqnadwthī "a man (who is) about to hear", "a man who will hear".

Relative: definite antecedent only (incl. definite articles, Proper Names and demonstratives; see circumstantial for indef. antecedents)

(a) antecedent = actor of the conjugation form (ɛt/-ėte-):

p(プwme) ɛt-ɴacwthī "the man who is going/about to hear, who'll hear", "He who'll hear", neg. p(プwme) ɛt-ɲqnadwthī an /
ɛtacwthī an

(b) antecedent = object/complement of the verbal predicate:
PRONOMINAL ACTOR (ἐπ-/ἐτε-)

πρώμε ετ-/-ἐτρ-/ἐτη-νακοτμένης “the man whom I am/you are/he is going/about to hear, will hear”, π-ἐτ-/-ἐτρ-/ἐτη-νακοτμένης “he whom I am/you are/he is going/about to hear, will hear”

Negated:

π(πρώμε) ετε-ἡμ-/-ημ-/ημ-νακοτμένης άν or π(πρώμε) ετ-/-ἐτρ-/ἐτη-νακοτμένης άν “the man/he whom I am/you are/he is not going/about to hear, won’t hear”

Nominal Actor (ἐτε-/-ἐτεφέ-)

πρώμε ετεφέ-πνούγε νακοτμένης “the man whom God is going/about to hear, will hear”, π-ἐτεφέ-πνούγε νακοτμένης “he whom God is going/about to hear, will hear” πρώμε ετεφέ-ογ-πρώμε ημάμη “the work which a man is going/about to do, will do” (existential)

Negated:

πρώμε ετε-ἡπνούγε νακοτμένης άν or πρώμε ετεφέ πνούγε νακοτμένης άν “the man whom God is not going/about to hear, won’t hear”

SECOND TENSE:

PRONOMINAL ACTOR:

ε-ηνακωτμή... “It is... that I am going/about to hear, will hear” (etc.)

Negated:

(Ή)νείνακωτμή άν... “It is not... that I am going/about to hear, will hear” (etc.)

Nominal Actor:

ἐπ-πρώμε ηνακωτμή... “It is... that the man is going/about to hear, will hear”

Negated:

(Ή) επ-πρώμε ηνακωτμή άν... “It is not... that the man is going/about to hear, will hear”

The Second Tense conversion is used to emphasize a constituent of the sentence, most often an adverb phrase.

PRETERITE:

PRONOMINAL ACTOR:

ηπ-ηνακωτμή (πε) “I was going/about to hear”, “I would hear, would have heard” (etc.)
Negatived:
не-инакωτυν αν (πε) 
“I was not going/about to hear”,
“I would not hear, would not have heard” (etc.)

Nominal actor:
не-πρωμε νακωτυν (πε) 
“The man was going/about to hear”, “The man would hear, would have heard”

Negatived:
не-πρωμε νακωτυν αν (πε) 
“The man was not going/about to hear”, “The man would not hear, would not have heard”

F4. Predicate: ADVERB-PHRASE PREDICATION PRESENT TENSE

Pronominal actor:
†πεινα, κάπεινα, τειπεινα, 
“I’m here”; “You’re here”; “He’s here (etc.)

Negatived:
(ν) †πεινα αν, νκπεινα αν/κπεινα “I’m not here”;
αν, (ν)τειπεινα αν, (ν)κπεινα αν ... 
“You’re not here”; “He’s not here” (etc.)

Pρωμε ππεινα “The man’s here”
Ογδογρωμε ππεινα “A man’s here” (existential:
“There’s a man here”)

Negatived:
(ν)πρωμε ππεινα αν “The man isn’t here”
(μ)κπρωμε ππεινα “No man is here” (existential:
“There isn’t a man here”)

Conversions:

Circumstantial:
Pronominal actor:
e-ιπεινα 
“I being here” (etc.)

Negatived:
e-ιντπεινα αν or e-ιπεινα αν “I not being here” (etc.)

Nominal actor:
eπρωμε ππεινα “the man being here”
eογδογρωμε ππεινα “a man being here”

Negatived:
e-μπρωμε ππεινα αν or eπρωμε ππεινα αν “the man not being here”
(e) (ὅ) ἄνθρωπος ἄνεμα “no man being here” (existential).

The circumstantial conversion in all forms is also used to expand and describe an indefinite/zero noun or indefinite pronoun: ὁ ἄνθρωπος ἄμεσα a man being here”.

Relative: definite antecedent only (incl. definite articles, Proper Names and demonstratives; see circumstantial for indef. antecedents)

(a) antecedent = actor of the conjugation form (ἐτ-/ἐτε-):
πρόνομος ἐτ-ἄνεμα “the man who is here” neg. πρόνομος ἐτε-

(b) antecedent represented (resumed) in the predicate adverb phrase:

Pronominal acter (ἐτ-/ἐτε-):
πώς ἐτ-ἀνεμ/ἐτξ-ἐτε-ἀνομ “the place in which I am / you are/

Negatived:
πώς ἐτε-ἀνεμ/ἐτξ-ἀνομ “the place in which I am / you are/

Nominal acter (ἐτ-/ἐτε-):
πώς ἐτε-προνομ ἄμο “the place in which the man is”
πώς ἐτεογι-ἐτε-προνομ ἄμο “the place in which a man is” (existential)

Negatived:
πώς ἐτ-προνομ ἄμο ἄν / ἐτε-προνομ ἄμο ἄν; πώς ἐτε(ἂ)νομ ἄμο “the place in which the man is not”:

Second Tense:

Pronominal acter:
πώς ἐτ-ἀνομ ἄν ἄν... “It is here that I am / you are / he is”; “It is... that I am here” (etc.)

Negatived:
πώς ἐτ-ἀνομ ἄν; πώς ἐτ-ἀνομ ἄν... “It is not here that I am / you are/

Nominal acter:
προνομ ἐτ-ἀνομ ἄν... “It is here that the man is”; “It is... that the man is here”

Negatived:
(μ)προνομ ἐτ-ἀνομ ἄν... “It is not here that the man is”;

“it is not... that the man is here”
The Second Tense conversion is used to emphasize a constituent of the sentence: either the predicate adverb phrase itself or a subsequent adverb phrase.

**Preterite:**

*pronominial actor:*

-ne-πειμά (πε)  
"I was here" (etc.)

*Negated:*

-ne-πειμά ἀν (πε)  
"I wasn’t here" (etc.)

*nominal actor:*

-νερέ-πρώμε-πειμά (πε)  
"The man was here"

*Negated:*

-νερέ-πρώμε-πειμά ἀν (πε)  
"The man wasn’t here"
### TABLE G

**THE CONVERTERS**

**CONVERTERS(\(\ast\)):** circumstantial relative Second Tense preterite

**Converted Clause**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Type</th>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Notes</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Nominal Sentence</td>
<td>(\epsilon)- (\epsilon\epsilon)- - (\ne)-</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Perfect (affirm.)</td>
<td>(\epsilon)- ((\epsilon)\epsilon)- ((\epsilon)\epsilon)- (\ne)-</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Perfect (neg.)</td>
<td>((\epsilon))- (\epsilon\epsilon)- (\epsilon\epsilon)- (\ne)-</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aorist (affirm.)</td>
<td>(\epsilon)- (\epsilon\epsilon)/(\epsilon\epsilon)- (\epsilon)- (\ne)-</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aorist (neg.)</td>
<td>(\epsilon)- (\epsilon)- - (\ne)-</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot;Not yet&quot;</td>
<td>((\epsilon))- (\epsilon\epsilon)- - (\ne)-</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Optative (affirm.)</td>
<td>- - - -</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Optative (neg.)</td>
<td>(\epsilon)- - -</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Durative conjugation**

(present, future, adverb predication)

(Table F) \(\epsilon(\rho\epsilon)\)- \(\epsilon\epsilon\)- \(\epsilon\epsilon(\rho\epsilon)\)- \(\epsilon(\rho\epsilon)\)- \(\ne(\rho\epsilon)\)-

**Existential/possessive clauses (Table E)** \(\epsilon\epsilon\)/\((\epsilon)\)- \(\epsilon\epsilon\)- \(\epsilon\)- \(\ne\)-

**Adjective Verbs**

(Table II) \(\epsilon\)- \(\epsilon\epsilon\)- \(\epsilon\epsilon\)- \(\epsilon\)- \(\ne\)-

The **Circumstantial** converter (sections 27-30) marks a clause as adjoining a predicate to and thereby modifying another ("main") clause or an indefinite noun/pronoun. (The English gerund ["-ing", as in "I found him writing a letter", "Walking home, I met John" or "Having tried everything, I finally chose on this method"] is often the best and structurally apt translation, but a conjunctival rendering ("while ...", "whereas ...", "since ...") is sometimes inevitable.

The **Relative** converter (sections 31-33) marks a clause as adnominal and attributive (describing) to a definite noun or pronoun.

(\(\ast\)) The converter forms given are the pronominal (presuffixed) and pronominal ones attested in the corpus drawn upon for this Chrestomathy.
The **SECOND TENSE** converter (sections 34-38) marks a conjugation form as of lower predicativity than other, non-verbal constituents of its clause, or, in the absence of other pertinent elements, puts into focus ("emphasizes") its own predicate. (The European Cleft Sentence construction ["It is... that...", "C'est... qui/que..."] is an apt translation, with the Second Tense the "that..." constituent.)

The **PRETERITE** converter (sections 39-41) marks the clause as divergent in time, place or actuality from a mainstream frame of reference.
TABLE H

THE ADJECTIVE VERBS: SYNTHETIC VERBAL CLAUSE-FORMS (Part One, Unit VI: sections 22-26)

III. ἡνογον-ον “He is good, fair”
ἡνε-ἡνογον-πρωμε “The man is good, fair”

Conversions(*):
Circumstantial. ἐ-ἡνογον “He being good, fair”
Relative ἐτ-ἡνογον “who is good, fair”, ἐτε-ἡνε-ἡνογον “whose... is good, fair”
Second Tense ἐ-ἡνογον “It is... that he is good, fair”
Preterite ἰ-ἡνογον “He was good, fair”

H2. ἀνωμον-ον “They are numerous”
ἀνωμο-πνοον “The water is plentiful”

Conversions(*):
Circumstantial. ἐ-ἀνωμον “they being numerous”
Relative ἐτ-ἀνωμον “who are numerous”, ἐτε-ἀνωμο-ἀνω “whose... are numerous”

H3. ἄνων(α)-ον “He is great”

Conversions(*):
Circumstantial. ἐ-άνων(α)ον “he being great”
Relative ἐτ-άνων(α)ον “who is great”
Second Tense ἐ-άνων(α)ον “It is... that he is great”

H4. ἁεσωο-ον “He is beautiful”, ἁεσε-πρωμε “The man is beautiful”

H5. ἁεσωο-ον “He is ugly”

Conversions(*):
Circumstantial. ἐ-ἁεσωο “He being beautiful”
Relative ἐτ-ἁεσωο “who is beautiful”

(*) The forms given are those actually attested in the source material; the wanting prenominal forms, converters (and some other Adjective Verbs) do occur outside this corpus
TABLE 1

LEXICAL VERB MORPHOLOGY  INFINITIVE/STATIVE
FORMAL CLASSES(*)

Note the following “principal parts” of the Coptic verb lexeme:

(a) The absolute (dictionary entry) form or state of the infinitive:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Coptic</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ὑστο</td>
<td>“choose”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἱστο</td>
<td>“build”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ᴳστο</td>
<td>“run”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>῾ακ</td>
<td>“inform”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>῰ὰναλα</td>
<td>“comfort”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἴσοβ</td>
<td>“be sweet”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ῡπε</td>
<td>“do, make”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ει</td>
<td>“come, go”</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(b) The (pre)nominal or construct form or state of the infinitive, occurring before a nominal, proper-name or demonstrative/indefinite/interrogative-pronoun direct object (marked in the dictionary by - ἴετν-):

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Coptic</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ἴετν</td>
<td>“choose (a man)”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἴετ</td>
<td>“build (a house)”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ῶετ</td>
<td>“inform (a man)”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>῰εταλα</td>
<td>“comfort (a man)”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>῰</td>
<td>“do (a work)”</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note the characteristic ε vowel, replaced by superlineation over sonorants.

(c) The pronominal form or state of the infinitive occurring before a suffix-pronoun direct object (marked in the dictionary by - ήττν-):

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Coptic</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ήττν</td>
<td>“choose (him)”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>῾ττ</td>
<td>“build (it)”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>῾ακο</td>
<td>“inform (him)”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>῰ακωλα</td>
<td>“comfort (him)”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αλα</td>
<td>“do (it)”</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note the characteristic ο vowel in regular verbs, corresponding to ο in the environment of original laryngeal consonants or 2.

(*) as represented in the source material for the Chrestomathy. Note that verbs of Greek origin are invariably and have only the dictionary entry form
OBS.
(1) Forms (a) to (c) are "states" of the infinitive, which has all syntactic properties of a noun (e.g. can be combined with the articles).
(2) Forms (b) and (c) are excluded from the durative present (Table F1) for a definite and indefinite (not zero-determinated) nominal object, form (c) excluded altogether from the durative present (the "Stern-Jernstedt Rule")
(3) Form (a) of intransitive verbs (esp. verbs expressing motion, posture or quality) is excluded from the durative present with the stative (form (d) below) taking its place as predicate.

(d) The stative or qualitative, occurring only as predicate in the durative conjugation (Table F), and, properly speaking, not a lexeme at all (not an "infinitive"). The stative, marked in the dictionary by a superscript crux (бот), expresses "being in a PASSIVE STATE (for transitive verbs) or COURSE OF ACTION or CONDITION (for intransitives)"

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Соти</th>
<th>&quot;(is) chosen&quot;</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Кит</td>
<td>&quot;(is) built&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>НИТ</td>
<td>&quot;(is) running&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ТАМН</td>
<td>&quot;(is) informed&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>САСВА</td>
<td>&quot;(is) comforted&quot; (also САСОЛТ)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>СОЛБ</td>
<td>&quot;(is) sweet&quot; (dur. present)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>О</td>
<td>&quot;(is) done&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>НИГ</td>
<td>&quot;(is) coming, going&quot;</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The stative is the distinctive form of the morphological verb class.
(TABLE I)

CLASSIFICATION(*

Note the following vowel alternations:
\( \omega \rightarrow \omega' \) following the nasal consonants \( n \) and \( m \)
\( \alpha \rightarrow \alpha' \) immediately preceding the laryngal consonant \( z \) and some cases of the “glottal stop” consonant (in which case we usually have \( e \) for \( n \))

Note also:
(1) \( \omega' \) may be a root consonant;
(2) a root consonant may be realized as zero (i.e. absent in writing);
(3) final \( e \) does not affect the assignment of a root to Classes II and II;
(4) a “broken syllable” (i.e. vowel reduplicated), often with an \( a \)-vowel corresponding to \( o \) elsewhere, is indicative of a “glottal stop” consonant.

Class I: Three-consonant roots

\[ \text{cωτπ} \] “choose” \[ \text{cετπ} \rightarrow \text{cοτπ} = \text{cοτπ}' \]
\[ \text{ογωνι} \] “appear”, “show” \[ \text{ογενς} \rightarrow \text{ογονς} = \text{ογονς}' \]
\[ \text{ωνι} \] “live” \[ \text{ομι}' \]
\[ \text{μογουτ} \] “kill” \[ \text{μεγτ} \rightarrow \text{μοουτ} = \text{μοουτ}' \]
\[ \text{πωτπ} \] “bend, throw down, pour” \[ \text{πεςτ} \rightarrow \text{παςτ} = \text{παςτ}' \]

Class II: Two-consonant roots

\[ \text{κωτ} \] “build” \[ \text{κετ} \rightarrow \text{κοτ} = \text{κοτ}' \]
\[ \text{ζωπ} \] “hide” \[ \text{ζεπ} \rightarrow \text{ζοπ} = \text{ζοπ}' \]
\[ \text{πωτ} \] “run” \[ \text{ποτ} = \text{ποτ}' \]
\[ \text{μογρ} \] “bind” \[ \text{μερ} \rightarrow \text{μορ} = \text{μορ}' \]
\[ \text{μογς} \] “fill” \[ \text{μες} \rightarrow \text{μας} = \text{μας}' \]
\[ \text{ωπ} \] “count” \[ \text{επ} \rightarrow \text{οπ} = \text{οπ}' \]
\[ \text{κω} \] “leave, lay” \[ \text{κα} \rightarrow \text{κας} = \text{κας}' \]
\[ \text{χωτε} \] “wipe (out)” \[ \text{χετ} \rightarrow \text{χοτ} = \text{χοτ}' \]

(*) Not in agreement with Stern’s eight classes. The correspondence is as follows: our Class I = Stern’s Class VI; II = Stern’s I; III = Stern’s II; IV = Stern’s VII; V = Stern’s V; VI = Stern’s VII; VII = Stern’s III. The infinitives quoted are representative examples, to illustrate the specific morphology of the classes.
CLASS III: medial "broken syllable" (glottal stop) roots

τωσβε  "repay" τεβε- τοοβ- τοοβ'
πωμε  "turn, pervert" πενε- ποοε- ποοε'
τωμε  "fit, be suitable" τοομε'
ψωττ  "cut" ψετ- ψατ- ψατ'

CLASS IV: "reduplicated syllable" roots:

κοκλεί  "comfort" κεκλεί- κεκλεϊ- κεκλεϊ' 
ψερττ  "trouble" ψερττ- ψερττ- ψερττψ- ψερττψ'
σκορκι  "roll" σκορκι- σκορκι- σκορκι' 
νοβνηβ  "reproach" νεβνηβ- νεβνηβ'

CLASS V: τ--ο pattern roots: causative lexemes

ταμο  "inform" Ταμε- Ταμο- Ταμυ'
τκαβο  "teach" τκαβε- τκαβο- τκαβυ'
τουκο  "save, cause to be hale" τουκε- τουκο- τουκυ'
Κπο  "beget, cause to exist" Κπε- Κπο'
κτο  "return, cause to turn" Κτε- Κτο- Κτυ'

CLASS VI: "καθ" — quality, state or condition (physical or psychological)

καθ  "be sweet" καθ'
νωτ  "be hard, severe" νωτ'
μητον  "rest (oneself)" μητ'
μκατ  "be hurt, ache" μκατ'

CLASS VII: "χιε" "j-absolute" roots, with final e alternating with final -t in pronominal state:

χιε  "raise" χε- χετ- χετ- χεε'
πιε  "bend" πε- πετ- ποκε- ποκε'
eιε  "bring" ιε- ιε'

IRREGULAR Class (selection):

cιε  "do, make" ιε- ιε- ιε'
†  "give" † τατ- το'
χι  "take" χι- χιτ- 
cια  "write" κια- κει- κια- κια'
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Word</th>
<th>Translation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>εἰμι</td>
<td>&quot;know&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ϑέμε</td>
<td>&quot;serve&quot; (εἰμεν)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μικρό</td>
<td>&quot;go&quot; (μικρόν)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>εἰ</td>
<td>&quot;come. go&quot; (μιμύ)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>δέννα</td>
<td>&quot;hurry&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἁνοος</td>
<td>&quot;sit&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αρετέ</td>
<td>&quot;stand&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μοι</td>
<td>&quot;die&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀμάζτε</td>
<td>&quot;hold&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ψωγχωγ</td>
<td>&quot;pride (oneself)&quot;</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
GLOSSARY

A. GLOSSARY OF MORPHEMES (GRAMMATICAL ELEMENTS)

This glossary includes elements of both native and Greek origin, bound morphemes (e.g. articles, conjugation bases, converters, prepositions, prefix and suffix pronouns, enclitic and proclitic pronouns, auxiliary verbs, derivational prefixes, negatives, etc.); personal, indefinite, demonstrative and interrogative pronouns; particles, conjunctions, adverbs; Adjective Verbs; existential and possession statements, and more. Numbers refer to pages of Crum’s Coptic Dictionary. The arrangement is alphabetical, by consonants and then vowels (as in Crum’s Dictionary).

NB: (-) following a morpheme means “prefixed to a noun or pronoun”; (=), “attached to a suffix-pronoun”.

- afirmative perfect base
- prefix of affirmative imperative (for certain verbs)
- “about ...” (with numbers or quantities)
- rare variant of preposition e-
- (Adv.) but
- “there is a difference between ... and ...
- negativus of nexus in non-verbal clauses
- “We are...”, proclitic subject pronoun in Nominal Sentence, 1st plur.
- “I am...”; proclitic subject pronoun in Nominal Sentence, 1st sgl.
- personal pronoun, 1st sgl. “I”
- reinforcer: “...for my part” (French (quant) à moi)
- personal pronoun, 1st plur. “we”
- reinforcer: “...for our part” (French (quant) à nous)
- (prep.) against, instead of
- part. introducing rhetorical question: “Is it the case that...?”
- 2nd sgl. fem. variant of perfect base
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Table</th>
<th>Description</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>AT-</td>
<td>privative prefix: &quot;less&quot;, &quot;un-&quot; (18b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AYW</td>
<td>(adv.) and, additionally (19b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AY</td>
<td>(interr. pronoun) which? what? (22a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AKH-, EKH-</td>
<td>(prep.) without; presuffixal AKH-(2) (25b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AKH-</td>
<td>see AKH-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>...RAP</td>
<td>causal-explicative clause-connecting particle</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>...AE</td>
<td>faintly adversative clause-connecting particle</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E-</td>
<td>circumstantial converter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E-</td>
<td>Second Tense converter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E-</td>
<td>(prep.) to, against; marking object of verbs of perception; introducing infinitive; presuffixal EPO-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E-...E-</td>
<td>affirmative optative base</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E-...TH-</td>
<td>negative Contitional base (rare)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E-...WAN-</td>
<td>Conditional base</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EBOA</td>
<td>(adv.) out</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EIMHTI</td>
<td>(conj.) unless</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ENOE-</td>
<td>remote condition marker (&quot;If I had...&quot;)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ENOE-</td>
<td>interrogation marker</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EN(TA-), NT(TA-)</td>
<td>relative converter with affirmative perfect</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EN(TA-), NT(TA-)</td>
<td>Second Tense converter with affirmative perfect</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ENQOCON, NQOCON</td>
<td>(conj. adv.) as long as...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EPE-</td>
<td>form before noun, 2nd sg1. fem., indef., interrog. and demonstrative pronouns of (1) affirmative Optative, (2) circumstantial present, (3) Second Present</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ERPAT-</td>
<td>(prep.) to... (person, with movement)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EPO-</td>
<td>see E- (prep.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ERWAN-</td>
<td>Conditional base before nominal, 2nd sg1. fem., inter., indef. and demonstrative pronoun actor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ET-, ETE-</td>
<td>relative converter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ETE-</td>
<td>Second Tense converter (with negative perfect)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ETBE-</td>
<td>(prep.) about, because of (61a); presuffixal ETBEHNT-; ETBEON? why?</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
ETEPE- relative converter in the present and future, before nominal, 2nd sgl. fem., interrog., indef. and demonstrative pronoun actor
ΕΤΟΟΤ- (prep.) to (the hands of) (477a); presuffixal
ΕΥ- to be able to (with inf.); Υ- after vowel
ΕΥΨΗΕ introducing conditional clause: “Should it be the case that ...”, “Be it ..., be it ...”
ΕΥΨΗΕ- assumptive “conditional” prefix: “If (as we know) ...”, “Granted that ...”, “Given that ...”: “Even though ...”
ΖΩΕ ΕΥΨΗΕ- as if
ΕΞΟΥΝ (adv.) in, inside
ΕΞΡΗ- (prep.) in the face of ... (649a); presuffixal
ΕΞΡΑ- see ΖΗΑ-/
ΕΞΡΑΙ (adv.) up (to), down (to)
ΕΞΡΗ- (prep.) on, onto (757a); presuffixal ΕΞΨΑ-
ΕΞΡΗ- ΑΞΡΗ- (prep.) without (25b); presuffixal ΑΞΨΗ-
ΑΞΨΗ- see ΕΞΡΗ- (prep.) without
Η, ΗΕ (conj.) disjunctive: or
Η introducing subsequent rhetorical question: “Or is it the case that ...?”
ΘΕ (τ-ΘΕ) ΝΘΕ, ΚΑΘΑΘΕ as ..., like ... (“in/according to the manner of .../that ...”) (638b)
-Ι-, -ΕΙ-, -Ι-, -ΕΙ- 1st sgl. suffix pronoun “I”, “me”
ΕΙ- “then ...” (introducing main clause after ΕΥΨΗΕ-)
ΕΙΣ-, ΕΙΣΘΗΤΕ “Here is ...”, presentative (85a)
ΕΙΣΕ ..., ΕΙΣΕ ... (conj.) disjunctive: either ... or ...
Κ- 2nd sgl. masc. prefix pronoun: “you” (in durative pattern)
-Κ- Κ 2nd sgl. masc. suffix pronoun “you”
ΚΕ, ΚΕ- (un)other, ... too; plur. ΚΟΟΥΕ (90b)
-ΡΓΚΕ- see Ρ-
ΚΆΙΡΑΡ particle “for indeed”
ΚΑΝ (adv., conj.) even-though-at least (with imperative and jussive)
TABLES

**KATA-**
(prep.) according to; presuffixal KATAPO-
see KE-

**KOOGE**

**LADDY**
anything, something (146a)

**MA-**
imperative prefix of causative verbs (“MATA-
MOI”) tell me!

**MH, MHTI**
introducing rhetorical question (“Is it not the
case (that?)”)

**ME-**
negative aorist base, presuffixal

...MIN MIN-
reinforcer: “... (him)self”

MIN, MN-
“There is not...” “There does not exist...”; statement of non-existence

**MN-**
(prep.) with; presuffixal MINA-, 2nd sgl. fem.
MINI (169b)
between nouns, coordinating: “...and...”

... MIN, MN
particle, approx. “on the other hand, ...”

**MNON**
sentence-word: “No” (168a)

**MNNCA-**
(prep.) after, “following” (of time) (314b); pre-
suffixal MNNCA-

**MNT-**
(with noun or infinitive) prefix deriving abstract
nouns (“-ness”, “-ship”, “-dom”) (176a)

(M)MNTAI/(M)MINTE-
“(He/the man) has not: statement of negative
possession (167b)

**MNE-**
negative perfect base (presuffixal)
negative perfect base, before nominal, 2nd sgl.
fem., indef., interrog. and demonstrative pro-
noun actor

**MNPOTE**
(adv., conj.) lest

**MPAT-**
“not yet” base, presuffixal

**MPATE-**
“not yet” base, before nominal, 2nd sgl. fem.,
indef., interrog. and demonstrative pronoun actor

**MPP**
negative imperative prefix, with infinitive (“Do
not...”)

**MPPRPE-**
negative causative imperative (jussive) prefix,
with infinitive (“let him not...”); 1st sgl. MPPPRA-

**MARE-**
causative imperative (jussive) prefix (“Let
him...”)

**KAN... KAN... “Be it..., be it...”**
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Word</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ñ- (_third person singular)</td>
<td>definite article, plural (&quot;the...&quot;)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-Ñ</td>
<td>base of conjunctive, before a pronoun</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ñ- ... an, ... an</td>
<td>negativer of nexus in non-verbal clauses</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-Ñ- -Ñ</td>
<td>1st plur. suffix pronoun, &quot;we&quot;, &quot;us&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>na</td>
<td>possessive article, 1st sgl. possessor, plural possessed &quot;my...&quot; (French mes...)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>na</td>
<td>possessive pronoun, plural &quot;they of...&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-na-</td>
<td>see Ñ- (prep.) to.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-na-</td>
<td>inflex or auxiliary of future tense</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ña(s)</td>
<td>Adjective Verb &quot;(He/the man) is great&quot; (218b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ne-</td>
<td>possesive article, plural possessed: nek- neq- nec- nen- netñ- ney- &quot;your (masc.), his, her, our, your (plur.), their&quot; (French tes, ses, nos, vos, leurs)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ñai</td>
<td>demonstrative pronoun, plural &quot;these (ones)&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ñei-</td>
<td>demonstrative article, plural &quot;these...&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>...ñe</td>
<td>&quot;They are&quot;, plural enclitic subject in Nominal Sentence</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nh</td>
<td>&quot;to you&quot;, 2nd sgl. fem. form of prep. Ñ-/na-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nh</td>
<td>demonstrative pronoun, plural &quot;those (ones)&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ni-</td>
<td>demonstrative article, plural &quot;those...&quot; (emotional)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>noy</td>
<td>possessive article, 2nd sgl. fem. possessor: &quot;your&quot; (French tes, fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>TABLES</strong></td>
<td>207</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>NOY-</strong></td>
<td>possessive pronoun, plural possessed: “mine, yours, his, ours, yours, theirs” (French <em>les miens, les tiens, les siens, les nôtres, les vôtres, les leurs</em>)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>NBALA-</strong></td>
<td>(prep.) except, beside (35a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>NIM</strong></td>
<td>interrogative pronoun: who? (225b); indefinite “so-and-so”</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
| ...**NIM** | determinator and distributive quantifier: all..., every...
| **NHMA-** | see (prep.) MÑ- |
| **NANOY-/NANE-** | Adjective Verb: “(He/the man) is good, fair” (227a) |
| **NNA-** | 1st sgl., negative Optative base |
| **NNE-** | negative Optative base |
| **NEPE-** | preterite converter before nominal, 2nd sgl. fem., indef., interrog. and demonstrative pronoun actor |
| **NECW-/?NECE-** | Adjective Verb: “(He/the man) is beautiful” (228b) |
| **NCA-** | (prep.) after (314a); presuffixal ÑCOW- |
| **NAIAT-** | sentence-word: “Blessed is...” (74a) |
| **ÑT(2-), ENT(2-)** | Second Tense converter before affirmative perfect |
| **ÑT(1-), ENT(1-)** | relative converter before affirmative perfect |
| **ÑTA-, TA-** | 1st sgl. of conjunctive |
| **ÑTE-** | conjunctive base before nominal, 2nd sgl. fem., indef., interrog. and demonstrative pronoun actor |
| **ÑTE-** | (prep.) of, with (possession and appurtenance): presuffixal ÑTA- |
| **ÑTE-** | “you (fem.) are”, proclitic subject pronoun in Nominal Sentence, 2nd sgl. fem. |
| **ÑTO** | personal pronoun, 2nd sgl. fem. “you” |
| ...**ÑTO-** | reinforcer: “...for (his part)” (French “(quant) à lui”) |
| **ÑTOK** | personal pronoun, 2nd sgl. masc. “you” |
| **ÑTK-** | “You (masc.) are”, proclitic subject pronoun in Nominal Sentence, 2nd sgl. masc. |
| **ÑTN-** | (prep.) in the hands of...; presuffixal ÑTOOT-, ÑTOT-; before 2nd plur. pronoun |
| **ÑTEPE-** | base of Temporal, prenominal & presuffixal |
| **ÑTOC** | personal pronoun, 3rd sgl. fem. “she” |
"You (plur.) are...", proclitic subject pronoun in Nominal Sentence, 2nd plural.

personal pronoun, 2nd plural "you"

personal pronoun, 3rd plural "they"

personal pronoun, 3rd singular masculine "he"
adversative particle: approx. "on the other hand"

Adjective Verb: "(They/the people) are numerous"

(prep.) before, in the presence of: presuffixal (n)ναζρη-

(conj.) as long as...

presuffixal of ζη- (prep.) in

introducing nominal specification of 3rd person pronominal actor: "namely..."

(adv.) again, still

definite article, sgl. masculine, "the"

π with relative: "the one who..."

possessive pronoun, sgl. masc., "he of..."

"He is...", "It is...", sgl. masc. enclitic subject in Nominal Sentence

element accompanying the preterite converter; often "the background situation is, that..."

possessive article, sgl. masc. possessed: πεκ- (πεκ-) πευ- πεσ- πευ- πετη- πευ- "your (masc., her, her, our, your (plur.), their)" (French ton, son, nôtre, vôtre, leur)

possessive article, 1st sgl. possessor, masc. sgl. possessed: "my..." (French mon)

demonstrative pronoun, sgl. masc., "this (one)"

demonstrative article, sgl. masc., "this..."

demonstrative pronoun: sgl. masc.: "that (one)"

demonstrative art., sgl. masc. "that..." (emotional)

π-...ναγμπτ "the very same...

possessive article, 2nd sgl. fem. possessor, sgl. masc. possessed: "your..." (French ton, fem.)
\(\pi\omega\)  
possessive pronoun, sgl. masc. possessed: “mine, yours, his, hers, ours, yours, theirs” (French le mien, le tien, le sien, le nôtre, le vôtre, le leur)

\(\pi\alpha\alpha\alpha\)  
(prep.) beside, alongside, against

\(\pi\rho\sigma\alpha\)  
(prep.) for (a period of time)

\(\pi\epsilon\kappa\alpha\)  
“(He/the man) said (285a)

\(\tilde{r}\)  
with noun: auxiliary, deriving verbs from nouns: “do…”, “make…”, “be, act as…” (prenom. of \(\epsilon\rho\epsilon\))

\(-\tilde{r}\nu\kappa\epsilon\) “to (do) also…”

\(-\tilde{r}\nu\gamma\nu\nu\) “to (do) first…”

\(-\tilde{r}\rho\gamma\nu\epsilon\) “to (do) rather…”

\(\rho\omega\)  
particle: “at all”, “really”, “…indeed”; often marking the preceding element as local

\(\rho\nu\nu\), \(\rho\nu\nu\nu\)  
“man of…”: With placenames: prefix forming local nouns. With nouns: deriving nouns from nouns (295a)

\(\rho\epsilon\nu\)  
“man who…”. With infinitives: prefix forming agent nouns from verb (cf. English -er, -or). (295a)

\(c\)  
3rd sgl. fem. prefix pronoun: “she”, “it” (in the durative pattern)

\(-c\)  
3rd sgl. fem. suffix pronoun: “she”, “it”

\(\epsilon\epsilon\)  
sentence-word: “yes” (316a)

\(\epsilon\epsilon\epsilon\)  
3rd plural prefix pronoun: “they” (in the durative pattern)

\(-\epsilon\epsilon\)  
3rd plural objective pronoun: “them”

\(-\epsilon\nu\gamma\)  
3rd plural objective pronoun: “them”

\(\epsilon\lambda(\nu\nu\nu\nu)\)  
“man of…”, “maker/seller of…”. deriving prefix (316a)

\(t-(\tau e-\rho\nu\nu\nu)\)  
definite article, sgl. fem.: “the”

\(-t\)  
1st sgl. suffix pronoun (as object, following consonants and doubled vowels)

\(\tau\alpha\)  
possessive article, 1st sgl. possessor, sgl. fem. 
possessed: “my…” (French ma)

\(\tau\alpha\)  
possessive pronoun, sgl. fem. “she of…”

\(\tau\alpha\), \(\tilde{\nu}\tau\alpha\)  
1st sgl. form of conjunctive

\(\ldots \tau\epsilon\)  
“She is…”. “It is…”, sgl. fem. enclitic subject in Nominal Sentence
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Prefix</th>
<th>Description</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>τε-</td>
<td>2nd sgl. fem. prefix pronoun: “you” (in durative pattern)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τε-</td>
<td>possessive article, sgl. fem. possessed: τεκ- τεγ- τες- τεν- τετην- τεγ- “your (masc.), his, her, our, your (plur.), their…” (French ta, sa, nôtre, vôtre, leur)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ται</td>
<td>demonstrative pronoun, sgl. fem.: “this (one)”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τει-</td>
<td>demonstrative article, sgl. fem., “this…”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τη</td>
<td>demonstrative pronoun, sgl. fem., “that (one)”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>†- τι-</td>
<td>demonstrative article, sgl. fem., “that…” (emotional)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>†-</td>
<td>1st sgl. prefix pronoun: “I” (in durative pattern)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>†-</td>
<td>with noun: auxiliary, deriving verbs from nouns: “give”, “cause”, “make to…”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τογ-</td>
<td>possessive article, 2nd sgl. fem. possessor, sgl. fem. possessed: “your…” (French ta, fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τω-</td>
<td>possessive pronoun, sgl. fem. possessed: “mine, yours, his, hers, ours, yours, theirs” (French la, la mienne, la tienne, la siene, la nôtre, la vôtre, la leur)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τμ-, τθμ-</td>
<td>negativer; (1) of infinitive (prefixed), (2) of dependent clause base conjugation (infixed)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τθ-</td>
<td>1st plur. prefix pronoun: “we” (in durative pattern)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-τθν-, τθν-</td>
<td>2nd plur. suffix pronoun: “you”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ῥα-</td>
<td>future conjunctive base</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>... ῥα-</td>
<td>reinforcer: “all of…”,” the whole of…”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τρα-</td>
<td>1st sgl. form of causative infinitive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τρε-</td>
<td>causative infinitive: “to cause him to …”, “to let him …”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-θυτθν</td>
<td>2nd plur. pronoun (esp. as object of verb and after prepositions ending in consonant)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τεθθν-</td>
<td>2nd plur. prefix pronoun: “you” (in durative pattern)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-τεθθν-</td>
<td>2nd plur. suffix pronoun (esp. infixed, following short conjugation bases)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογ</td>
<td>interrogative pronoun: “what?” (467b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογ-</td>
<td>indefinite article, masc. &amp; fem.: “a…”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-ογ, γ</td>
<td>3rd plur. suffix pronoun: “they”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογα</td>
<td>one (masc.) (469a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογει</td>
<td>one (fem.) (469a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greek</td>
<td>English</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-------</td>
<td>---------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογε-</td>
<td>(prep.) against (476a); presuffixal ογη-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογαε</td>
<td>(conj.) neither, nor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογκογν</td>
<td>particle: doubtlessly; therefore</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογμόνον</td>
<td>(adv.) not only</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογη-</td>
<td>&quot;There is&quot;, &quot;There exists&quot;, statement of existence (481a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογουν</td>
<td>some(one), any(one); something, anything (482a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογντα- / ογντε-</td>
<td>&quot;(He/the man) has&quot;, verb of possession (481a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογερ</td>
<td>interrogative pronoun: &quot;how much?&quot; &quot;how many?&quot; &quot;how great?&quot; (488b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογωτ</td>
<td>single, in πι- ... ογωτ &quot;the very same...&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογτε</td>
<td>(conj.) neither, nor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογτε-</td>
<td>(prep.) between (494b); presuffixal ογτω-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογε-</td>
<td>interjection: O! (esp. in address)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογε-</td>
<td>to be able to (with infinitive)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογε-</td>
<td>affirmative aorist base</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογε-</td>
<td>(prep.) (up) to, toward, until (541b); presuffixal ογαο-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-ογαν-</td>
<td>part of conditional base (ε ... ογαν-)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογαντ-</td>
<td>&quot;until...&quot; base, presuffixal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογαντε-</td>
<td>&quot;until...&quot; base, before nominal, 2nd sgl. fem., indef., interrog. and demonstrative pronoun actor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογαρε-</td>
<td>affirmative aorist base, before nominal, 2nd sgl. fem., interr. &amp; indef. pronominal actors</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-ογφπ(η)-</td>
<td>in -ρογφπ(η)-: see -ρ-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ογφε</td>
<td>&quot;It is right, befitting&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ξωρκε-</td>
<td>(prep.) without</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ι-</td>
<td>3rd sgl. masc. prefix pronoun: &quot;he&quot; (in durative pattern)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-ι, -η</td>
<td>3rd sgl. masc. suffix pronoun: &quot;he&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ιuke-</td>
<td>(prep.) under for (632a); presuffixal ιαρο-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ιου</td>
<td>(prep.) (up)on, from upon; with (643b); presuffixal ιουω-</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

between zero-determined nouns, coordinating "... and...", "... and..."
...2ωω- reinforcer: "... for (his) part", "... (he) too": 1st sgl. 2ω, 2ωωτ, 2nd sgl. fem. 2ωωτε, 2nd plur. 2ωττθυτῇ

2αμοί interjection: "Would that ...!"

2ην- 2ην- indefinite article, plural: "some ..."

2ην (2ην-) (prep.) in, at (683a): presuffixal 2ηντ- 2ην (2ην-) (prep.) into, against (685a)

2ηνα/-2ηνε, ε2ηνα/-ε2ηνε- "(He/the man) is willing" (690a)

2οινε, 2οεινε indefinite pronoun: some, several, a few

2ωκ- (prep.) as

2ω κτε (conj.) so as (to)

2ήντ- (prep.) of (e.g. in "afraid of ...", "wait for ...") (640b)

2ήντζ see ε1ε

2ίτν- (prep.) by (agency of), from (428b): presuffixal 2ίτουτ-, 2ίτε-θυτῇ

2οτάν (conj.) when(ever), as soon as ...

2οε- in -2οε-: see 2-

...2ωωυ particle: but, on the other hand; at all

2α quantifying pronoun: many

2α2θν- (prep.) with (717a): presuffixal 2α2θν- 2αθν- 2ιαν- (prep.) upon (758b): presuffixal 2ιαω-

ακ- (conj.) that, so that, saying that

ακκακ, ακακ (conj.) in order to, so that

ακάν(α) (prep.) since (772a)

ακτα- (with the perfect tense)

ακ- (conj.) or

...6ε particle: approx. "then", "therefore" (cf. French done, Greek oun) (802a)

6ε- see 6κ- 6ιν- (with infinitive) deriving abstract action nouns from verbs
B. LEXICAL GLOSSARY

(1) The words in the lexeme glossary are entered after each letter, in the following order: native words, (2) words of Greek origin, (3) proper names. An independent morpheme glossary follows. The native words in the lexeme glossary are arranged by their consonant skeleton (with subarrangement by vowels), according to Crum's method (Coptic Dictionary, Oxford, 1939; also Westendorf, Koptisches Handwoerterbuch, Heidelberg 1965-1977, with some minor changes): all other entries (Greek words, proper names) are arranged in the Western alphabetic order (initial γ not counting as a letter; ι before τ or ς = u). Numbers in parentheses following the English equivalents refer to Crum's dictionary, where the full information concerning the lexical item may be found.

(2) The forms and meanings given are those attested in the Chrestomathy, not "in Coptic"; for a comprehensive presentation of forms and semantic synthesis the student is referred to Crum's or Westendorf's dictionaries.

(3) Gender (masc./fem.) is indicated for a noun only when it is either evident in our Coptic text or unambiguously attested elsewhere; the absence of such indication means (a) either gender or (b) ambiguous evidence.

(4) Prenominal and presuffixal forms of verbs and prepositions are marked in the conventional manner, by - and ~ respectively.

Note the following abbreviations:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>adv.</td>
<td>adverb</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>art.</td>
<td>article</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fem.</td>
<td>feminine</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>imp.</td>
<td>imperative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>indef.</td>
<td>indefinite</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>interj.</td>
<td>interjection</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>interr.</td>
<td>interrogative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>masc.</td>
<td>masculine</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>part.</td>
<td>particle</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>plur.</td>
<td>plural</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>poss.</td>
<td>possessive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>prep.</td>
<td>preposition</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pron.</td>
<td>pronoun</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sgl.</td>
<td>singular</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>top.</td>
<td>toponym (placename)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Term</td>
<td>Definition</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------</td>
<td>------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>a-</strong></td>
<td>about ..., approximately (with quantity or number) (1a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>αα -</strong></td>
<td>see εἰρε</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ἀβῳ</strong></td>
<td>fisherman’s net (fem.) (2a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ἀβωκ</strong></td>
<td>crow; plural ἀβοκε (2b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ἀλο-</strong></td>
<td>“Cease!”, imper. of λο</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ἀλογ</strong></td>
<td>youth (masc.) (5a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ἀματε</strong></td>
<td>to hold, have power over (9a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>(with art.) power, rule (9a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ἀμογ</strong></td>
<td>“Come/go!”, imper. of εἰ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ἀναι</strong></td>
<td>to be pleasing (11a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>π-ἀναι be pleasing; imp. ἀρι-ἀναι</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>(with art.) beauty (11a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ἀναγ</strong></td>
<td>“See!”, imper. of ἀγ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ἀναγφ</strong></td>
<td>oath (masc.) (12b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>π-ἀναγφ take an oath</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ἀνα</strong></td>
<td>Father (title) (13a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ἀνε head (fem.) (13b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ἀπ- “Do/make!”, imper. of εἰρε</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ἀπικς</strong></td>
<td>blame (15a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>δι-ἀπικς to blame</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ἀποογ</strong></td>
<td>thistle, thorn (16a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ἀκηκ</strong></td>
<td>great size or quantity (fem.) (2a) (ἀλατ, to increase, be great)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ἀκογ</strong></td>
<td>price, value (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ἀγαν</strong></td>
<td>colour (masc.) (20b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ἀγαζοµ</strong></td>
<td>to sigh (ωψ) (24b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ἀγαλ</strong></td>
<td>to be, become numerous, multiply (22b); stative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>οψ “(is) numerous, plentiful”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>(with art.) large amount or number</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ἀγη</strong></td>
<td>multitude, great number (fem.) (22b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ἀγ</strong></td>
<td>meat (masc.) (23a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ἀγ fly (masc.) (23b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ἀγενεβιω honeybee</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ἀγε</strong></td>
<td>lifetime, life limit (masc.) (24a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ἀγε(πατ-)</strong></td>
<td>see ωζε</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ἀγο</strong></td>
<td>treasure (masc.) (24b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ἀγω</strong></td>
<td>eagle (masc.) (25b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ἀγεπατ-</strong></td>
<td>to stand (up) (ωζε)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ἀγην</strong></td>
<td>see κωκ ἀγην</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Term</td>
<td>Meaning</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>-------------------------------------------------------------------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀδοπήν</td>
<td>childless, sterile person (26b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀικός</td>
<td>“Say (it)!”. imp. of ἄω</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀέρ, ἀὴρ</td>
<td>air, sky (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀγαθόν</td>
<td>(the) good, goods (property) (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀγαθός/ον</td>
<td>good</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀγάπη</td>
<td>love, charity (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀγίωτατος</td>
<td>most holy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀγων</td>
<td>combat (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀγριός/ον</td>
<td>wild</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀιρήσις</td>
<td>heresy (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄιρηστικός</td>
<td>heretic</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀισθανέω</td>
<td>to feel, perceive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀιθωμα</td>
<td>request (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀιχμαλωτός</td>
<td>captive, prisoner</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀίων</td>
<td>age, era (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄκαθαρσία</td>
<td>impurity (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄκαθαρτος/ον</td>
<td>impure</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄκροβυστία</td>
<td>foreskin (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄληθως</td>
<td>truly (adv.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἄλλοτρος</td>
<td>alien, foreign</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀμήλετοι</td>
<td>to be indifferent, careless, neglectful</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀναγνωστής</td>
<td>reader</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀγέλος</td>
<td>angel (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀναγκάζω</td>
<td>to force</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀναγκαῖος/ον</td>
<td>necessary, important</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀνάγκη</td>
<td>distress, necessity (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀναχωρέω</td>
<td>to leave, go off</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀνέχει</td>
<td>to bear, suffer with patience</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀνομία</td>
<td>lawlessness (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀνομος/ον</td>
<td>lawless</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀνοξήθι</td>
<td>forbearance (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀντί</td>
<td>(prep.) against, instead of</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀπίστος</td>
<td>to demand, expect, require</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀπάνθρωπος</td>
<td>inhuman</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀπαύγα</td>
<td>to encounter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀπάτα</td>
<td>to err, mislead</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀπάθηθι</td>
<td>error (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀπείραθι</td>
<td>promise, threat (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀπίστος</td>
<td>unbelieving, infidel</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
GLOSSARY

ἀπανώς (adv.) simply
ἀποδείξει argument, proof (fem.)
ἀποθήκη storehouse, barn (fem.)
ἀπολογία excuse, explanation (fem.)
ἀπόστολος apostle (masc.)
ἀποτακτέει to renounce, give up
ἀργός idle, slothful
ἀρετή virtue (fem.)
ἀρσικτόν breakfast (masc.)
ἀρνά to deny
ἀρχαῖον ἀρχαῖον archangel
ἀρχαῖος/ἀρχαῖα of old
ἀρχή office, authority (fem.)
ἀρχή beginning, origin (fem.)
ἀρχεῖον to rule
ἀρχεῖον to begin (ἀρχ- to)
ἀρχιερεύς archbishop (masc.)
ἀρχιερεύς archpriest (masc.)
ἀρχων magistrate, office-holder, archon (masc.)
ἀσεβής impious person
ἀσπάζει to greet, salute
ἀγγέλου ἀγγελος prefect, Augustalis (masc.)
ἀγγελεῖ to grow, increase
ἀφορμή incitement (fem.)

PROPER NAMES:

Abel
Abraham
Adam
Azarias
Ananias
Andrew
Athanasius
Alexander
Amenti, the Underworld, Hades (masc. top.)
Ann
Father (title)
Apollo
### GLOSSARY

#### B (BETA)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Term</th>
<th>Definition</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>bm</strong></td>
<td>tree (fem.) (28a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>bhb</strong></td>
<td>den. cave (masc.) (28b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>babεe</strong></td>
<td>to be insipid (28b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>bwk</strong></td>
<td>to go (29a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>beke</strong></td>
<td>wages (masc.) (30b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>bab</strong></td>
<td>eye (masc.) (31b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>bbo</strong></td>
<td>outer part (masc.) (33b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>eboa</strong></td>
<td>(adv.) out; <strong>zip</strong> (adv.) outside</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>μ-</strong></td>
<td>to escape</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>kal-boa</strong></td>
<td>to vomit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>bno</strong></td>
<td>beside (prep.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ba-</strong></td>
<td>simple, frank (715a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>bo</strong></td>
<td>to loosen; to interpret (32b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>(with art.)</strong></td>
<td>interpretation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>babilaie</strong></td>
<td>grain (fem.) (37b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>bale</strong></td>
<td>blind person (38a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>bval</strong></td>
<td>(fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>bapiie</strong></td>
<td>goat (39a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>bome</strong></td>
<td>evil (39b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><strong>μ-</strong> to be evil, damaging</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>bitt</strong></td>
<td>see <strong>qitt</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>bpre</strong></td>
<td>new, young (43a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>barwt</strong></td>
<td>brass (43b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>bote</strong></td>
<td>abomination (fem.) (45b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>bawop</strong></td>
<td>fox (fem.) (47b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>bwe</strong></td>
<td>to bend (47b); prenominal <strong>b</strong>-</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Term</th>
<th>Definition</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>bapticma</strong></td>
<td>baptism (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>baprboc</strong></td>
<td>barbarian</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>bakanize</strong></td>
<td>to torture</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>bakanoc</strong></td>
<td>torture (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>banka</strong></td>
<td>judgement-seat (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>bico</strong></td>
<td>life, way of life (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>bapetie</strong></td>
<td>to harm, damage</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>bompe</strong></td>
<td>to aid</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>bompeia</strong></td>
<td>aid (fem.)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
PROPER NAMES:

βαβυλών Babylon (top.)
βακανός Bacanos
βαραχίας Barachias
βελζεβούλ Belzebub
βηλαμὼν Belamon, Baal-Hamon (top.)

ρ (GAMMA) (no Egyptian lexemes)

γαμός wedlock (masc.)
γενεά generation (fem.)
γένοιτο “May it come about”, “let it be!”
μὴ γένοιτο “God forbid!”
γένος kind (masc.)
γίγας giant
γραμματεύς scribe
νε-τε-γραφή the Scripture(s) (fem./plur.)
γυμναζέ to examine, dispute

PROPER NAMES:

τ-γαλιλαία the Galilee (top.)
τ-γεγεννά Hell, Gehenna (fem. top.)
γεζί Gehazi
γομορρα Gomorra (top.)

Δ (DELTA) (no Egyptian lexemes)

ἀδικαίος demon, evil spirit (masc.)
ἀδικία demon (masc.)
ἀπίθανον, ἀπίθανον dinner (masc.)
π-διαβολός the Devil
ἀδικήσῃ testament (fem.)
ἀδικονέω to serve, minister
ἀδικία the right, just (masc.)
ἀδικός righteous
ἀδικίασθαι righteousness (fem.)
ἀδικίασθαι act of justice, righteousness; ordinance (masc.)
ἀδίκαστριόν court of justice (masc.)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Term</th>
<th>Definition</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ΔΙΚΑΣΤΗΣ</td>
<td>judge (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΔΙΩΓΜΟΣ</td>
<td>persecution (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΔΟΧΙΜΑΣΕ</td>
<td>to put to the test</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΔΡΑΚΩΝ</td>
<td>python, serpent (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΔΡΑΠΕΤΗΣ</td>
<td>runaway slave (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΔΩΡΕΑ</td>
<td>gift (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΔΩΡΟΝ</td>
<td>gift (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ε (EPSILON)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΕΒΙΝΗ</td>
<td>poor, wretched person (53a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΕΒΟΤ</td>
<td>month (masc.) (53b); plur. εβοτε</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΕΒΨ</td>
<td>see ωβψ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΕΚΙΒΕ, ΚΙΒΕ</td>
<td>breast (fem.) (54a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΕΛΚΨ</td>
<td>sycomore fruit (54b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΕΜΗΡΕ</td>
<td>inundation (fem.) (56a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΕΜΑΤΕ</td>
<td>(adv.) greatly, much (190a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΕΜΑΥ</td>
<td>thither (197a); see ΜΜΑΥ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΕΝΤΗΒ, ΝΤΗΒ</td>
<td>plant (masc.) (233a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΕΝΕΣ</td>
<td>eternity (57a)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
| ΕΨΕΩΝΕΩ | ετελεψω ετελе
### GLOSSARY

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>εἰδοσ</td>
<td>sort, kind, class (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκκλησία</td>
<td>church (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐλαχιστος/ον</td>
<td>least</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>γελάνη</td>
<td>Hellenic, pagan, non-Christian</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>γελάνιζε</td>
<td>to hope</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>γελανίς</td>
<td>hope (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκρατεύει</td>
<td>to abstain, be continent</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐκράτησε</td>
<td>continent</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐνδοκον, ἰδοκον</td>
<td>(adv., conj.) as long as</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐντολή</td>
<td>commandment (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἔνοχια</td>
<td>authority (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπαινοῦ</td>
<td>to praise, commend</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπιβογάνη</td>
<td>counsel (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπιθυμεῖ</td>
<td>to desire</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπιθυμία</td>
<td>desire (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπικάλει</td>
<td>to call upon, turn to</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπικόπος</td>
<td>bishop (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπιστήμη</td>
<td>understanding, skill (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐργάσια</td>
<td>work, function, activity (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐγεργείον</td>
<td>Gospel (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐγενεβής</td>
<td>pious person</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐγφράνε</td>
<td>to gladden, delight</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐγφροσύνη</td>
<td>joy (fem.)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### PROPER NAMES:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ἔνωξ</td>
<td>Enoch</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπηνή</td>
<td>Epep, name of eleventh month</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐγγα</td>
<td>Eve</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### z (ZETA) (no Egyptian lexemes)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ζωμίν</td>
<td>soup. broth</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ζωών</td>
<td>animal (masc.)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### PROPER NAMES:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ζαχαρίας</td>
<td>Zacharias</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## GLOSSARY

### η (ETA)

| η | house (masc.) (66a) |
|––|––|
| ἰπ | stative of ὁπ |
| ἱπε | number (fem.) (527b) |
| ἱππ | wine (masc.) (66b) |

| θεγεμών | governor, hegemón (masc.) |
|––|––|
| ἦν | (adv.) already |
| θαλόνη | sensual pleasure (fem.) |
| θαλικία | age, adult state (fem.) |

### PROPER NAMES:

| Ἡσαύ | Esau |
|––|––|
| Ἡφαίστος | Hephaestus |

### θ (THETA)

| θε | in θεός, κατάθε see θε |
|––|––|
| θασ | leaven, moisture (457a) |
| θιβίο | to humiliate (457b); stative θιβίη "(is) humble, lowly"
(with art.) humbleness, humility |

| θάλασσα | the Sea |
|––|––|
| θεοφιλεστάτος | most God-loving |
| θεώρια | observation (fem.) |
| θηριον | wild beast (masc.) |
| θλιβε | to oppress, trouble |
| θλιψις | tribulation (fem.) |
| θρόνος | throne (masc.) |
| θυσίασθρίον | altar (masc.) |

### PROPER NAMES:

| θιλιμ | (i.e. θ-ιεροφαλαήθ) Jerusalem (top.) |
|––|––|
| θηβαίκ | the Thebaid (top.) |
GLOSSARY

cil 1 (IOTA)

cil to come, go (70a); stative σηγυ "(is) going, coming"; imperative ἀμογ

ciel valley (masc.) (73a)
ciel ἴατο- (possessed) eye (73)

tσαβε-έιατο- to enlighten, instruct

ciω to wash (75a)
ciω ass (75b)
ciβε to thirst (76a); stative οβε "(is) thirsty"
ciμε to know (77b)
ciνε to bring (78b); prenominal ἀ-; presuffixal ατ-
ciνε to resemble (80b)
(with art.) likeness, resemblance, aspect
cione work, task, craft, occupation (fem.) (81a)
cipe to do, make (83b); prenominal ιν-; presuffixal αι-; stative ο "(is) made"

π- auxiliary, deriving verbs from nouns; ο ἀ- "(is) in state/circumstance of", "be as"
ciωτ father (masc.) (86b); plur. eiοτε
ciωτ barley (masc.) (87a)
ciωτε dew (fem.)
(eiουαϊ) Jew

eιαωλον idol (masc.)
ζεικων picture, icon (fem.)
eιμήτι (adv.) unless
(ei)φρον, ιρρή peace (fem.)
eιφρονικός peaceful

PROPER NAMES:

λακωβ Jacob
λαφέτ Japheth
τί ῥον γις Jesus
ισαακ Isaac
ισαας Jesuas
ισμαήl Ishmael
ιογάας Judas
ιωβ Job
ιωζάννΗς John
ιωςήφ Joseph
GLOSSARY

κ (ΚΑΡΡΑ)

κε- (an)other: plur. κοογς
κογι small, little (92b)
κω to lay, set down (εγρατι); let, allow (94b); prenominal κα-., presuffixal κα-., static κη "(is) put, set"
κιβε see εκιβε
κβα revenge (masc.) (99b)
χι-κβα to take revenge
κβο to chill, refresh (100a); prenominal κβε- (with art.) coolness, chill
κακ in άγκακ: see γκακ
κακε darkness (masc.)
κεκ άγη to strip (101a); static κηκ άγη (is) stripped, nude
κλογε cloud (104a)
κλομ crown (masc.) (104b)
κάψ blow (105b)
†-κάψ to strike
κωλγ to knock (106b)
κωλο to bend (107b); prenominal κελα- κα-,
κημ to move, shake (108a)
κημομ to be, become black (109b)
κωμψ to sneer, mock (with κη-.) (110a)
κηνε to be fat, juicy (111b); static κηνογ "(is) fat, juicy"
κωνε to pierce, slay (112a)
κνομ to be, become putrid; to stink (112b)
κημ string, thread (masc.) (113a)
κρομμ to grumble, complain (116a)
κρομμε to be dark (116b)
κρογ guile (masc.) (118b)
κας bone (masc.) (120a); plur. κεες
κωτ to build (122a); prenominal κετ-., presuffixal κοτ-., static κητ "(is) built"
κωτε to turn, return (often reflexive); to encircle (ε-) (124a); prenominal κετ-., presuffixal κοτ-
κοτις crookedness, guile (127a), in μητ- σκοτις
κτο to turn, return; cause to turn, return (127b); static κητη "(is) turned"
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek Word</th>
<th>English Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>κιβωγ</td>
<td>see κινε</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κοογε</td>
<td>see κε</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>καζ</td>
<td>land, earth, country (masc.) (131a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κωζ</td>
<td>point (masc.) (132a); plur. κοοζ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κωζ</td>
<td>to be envious, begrudge (132b); stative κωζ &quot;(is) envious&quot; (with art.) envy, rivalry</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κοεεκ</td>
<td>sheath (masc.) (132b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κωζη</td>
<td>fire (masc.) (133b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>καθονσικ, καθονσικ</td>
<td>exposition, explanation (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>καθονκει</td>
<td>to join, be fitting, belong</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τ-καθολικη</td>
<td>the Catholic Church</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τ-καινη</td>
<td>the New Testament</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>καιρος</td>
<td>season, occasion, opportunity (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κακια</td>
<td>badness, vice (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>καλως</td>
<td>(adv.) well</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κανων</td>
<td>rule, canon (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>καρπος</td>
<td>fruit (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>καταλλαλει</td>
<td>to Calumniate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>καταφρονει</td>
<td>to disdain</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κηπος</td>
<td>garden (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κελεγε</td>
<td>to command, enjoin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κεραυνος</td>
<td>thunder (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κυριακη, κυριακη</td>
<td>Sunday (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κεφαλαιος/κον</td>
<td>(the) main, most important; capital</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κιναινεγε</td>
<td>to be in danger</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κιθαρωδος</td>
<td>lyre-player, harper</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κλατος, κλαδος</td>
<td>branch (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κληρονομει</td>
<td>to inherit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κοινωνει</td>
<td>to commune</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κοινωνια</td>
<td>community (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κολαζε</td>
<td>to punish, chastise</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κολασικ</td>
<td>punishment, chastisement (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κομεκ</td>
<td>comes, office-holder</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κοσμει</td>
<td>to adorn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κοσμησις</td>
<td>adornment (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κοσμικος/κον</td>
<td>worldly</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κοσμος</td>
<td>world, universe (masc.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κριμα</td>
<td>judgement, sentence (masc.)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
GLOSSARY

КΡΙΝΕ  to judge
КΡΙΘΣ  judge (masc.)
ΚΤΙΣΙΣ, ΚΘΗΣΙΣ  creation (fem.)

PROPER NAMES:

ΚΑΙΝ  Cain
ΚΑΙΣΑΡΙΟΣ  Caesarius
ΚΑΡΧΑΡΙΣ  Carcharis (top.)
ΚΗΜΗ  Egypt (masc. top.)
ΠΙΝΚΗΜΗ  Egyptian
Τ-ΚΗΡΙΑΚΗ  Sunday
ΚΡΟΝΟΣ  Kronos
ΚΥΡΙΑΛΟΣ  Cyril

Λ (LAMBDA)

ΛΟ  to cease (2α-) (135a); imp. ΛΑΟ-
ΛΙΣΕ  to be, become mad (136b); stative ΛΟΙΒΕ "(is) mad"
ΛΑΚΗ  piece (139a)
ΛΩΣΗΜΗ  to wither; to be filthy (142b)
ΛΑΣ  tongue (masc.) (144b)
ΛΑΣΓΥ  any(thing), some(thing) (146a)
ΛΩΣΞ  to crush; to be crushed (151a)
ΛΑΒΒΟ, ΛΟΦ  impudent person (151a)
ΛΟΙΒΕ  excuse (fem.) (151b)

ΛΑΜΠΑΣ  lamp, light
ΛΑΟΣ  people (masc.)
ΛΗΣΗΣ  robber
ΛΥΠΕΙ  to feel pain, sorrow; to cause pain
ΛΥΠΗ  pain, sorrow (fem.)
ΛΟΓΟΣ  speech, word, account (masc.)
†-ΛΟΓΟΣ (2α-) to account for
ΛΟΙΜΟΣ  pestilence

PROPER NAMES:

ΛΑΖΑΡΟΣ  Lazarus
ΛΑΜΕΧ  Lamech
ΛΟΥΚΑΣ  Luke
ΛΩΤ  Lot
m (MI)

ma·

place (masc.) (153a)

má-

imp. of ṭ to give; imp. prefix with causatives ("nataimoi")

mē

truth (fem.) (156b)

mē

to love (156a); prenominal mēte-, presuffixal mētē-:

mēi- "loving", agent noun with object; mētē
beloved person, plur. mētē

moy

to die (159a)

mōi-

see mē "to love"

mōyi

lion (160b)

mokmek

to reflect, deliberate (162a); presuffixal mēk-
moy-
(with art.) reflection

mākē

neck (masc.) (162b)

mākē

to be in pain, grieve, feel pain (163a); stative mokē "(is) in pain, (is) grieved"
(with art.) mākē nēhtē grief

mokē̄

suffering, pain (fem.) (164a)

moyalē

to salt (165a); presuffixal mōalē-

mēn̄-, mē̄-

"there does not exist", statement of non-existence

(m)mēnta-

"(He) has not", negative possession verboid; prenominal (m)mēnte-

mēn-

"no" (168a)

mēnte

(adv.) only, alone (190a)

mēmy

there (196b)

mēne

in mēnē: daily (172a)

mēnē

quality, type, sort (172a)

mōone

to pasture, feed (173a)
(with art.) pasture, feeding

mōone

to bring into port (173b)

mēncē-

(prep.) after, following (in time) (314b) pre-
suffixal mēncē-

mēntē

witness (177a)

mēntē

testimony

mōn̄a

to be worthy (179a)
(with art.) worth
μούρκ | to bind, tie (180a); presuffixal μορ-
μερίτ; plur. μεράτε | see me "to love"
μῆρω | harbour, landing stage (fem.) (183a)
μασσε | calf (186a) (masc.)
μίσε | to give birth (184a)
(With art.) birth
μῆσε | interest on loan (fem.) (186a)
† εμῆσε | to take interest, lend on interest
μοστε | to hate (187a); prenominal μεστε-, presuffixal μεστω-
μαστ- | "hating", agent noun with object
(with art.) hatred
μήτ | ten (187b)
ματε | to obtain (189a)
ματοι, ματοει | soldier (masc.) (190b)
ματογ | poison (fem.) (196a)
μήτε | middle (fem.) (190b)
μογτε | to call, name (191b)
μήτο εβολ | (with possessive art.) (someone's) presence (193a)
μήτον | to rest (also reflexive): to be comfortable, well
(193b) stative μοτῆ "(is) rested, comfortable";
"(is easy to do)"
(with art.) rest, repose, well-being, comfort
μαζγ | mother (fem.) (197a)
μοογ | water (masc.) (197b)
μεεγε | to think, have in mind (201a)
(with art.) thought
μ-πεμεγε (μ-), μ-πεμεγε | have in mind, recall
μογογ | to kill (201a); prenominal μεγ-, presuffixal μογ-
μοογ-, stative μοογ "(is) dead"
μακ | scales, balance (fem.) (201a)
μεσκακ | maybe, perhaps, "you do not know" (201b)
μισε | to fight, do battle (202b)
(with art.) battle
μησι | crowd, multitude (masc.)
μοοσε | to walk, go (203b)
μογγ | to search out, examine (206b); prenominal μεγ-, presuffixal μογ-
μεσγ | "it is not befitting" (negation of μεσγ) (608a)
Glossary

**ΜΟΥΣ**
to fill (208a); prenominal μέσ-. presuffixal

**ΜΑΙΣ** stative μέσ- "(is) full"

**ΚΟΙΣ**
to look (201b)

**ΜΟΙΣΩ, ΜΟΙΣΩ** marvel, wonder (fem.) (211b)

**ΚΑΣ**
car (masc.) 212b

**ΜΑΓΙΑ** magic (fem.)

**ΜΑΧΗΣ** disciple

**ΜΑΧΗΣ**
to consider happy, blessed

**ΜΑΧΗΣ**
happy, blessed

**ΜΑΧΗΣ**
edeemniate

**ΜΑΧΗΣ, ΜΑΧΗΣ** (adv.) "not to mention", especially, rather

**ΜΑΧΗΣ, ΜΑΧΗΣ**
π-ΜΑΧΗΣ Mammon

**ΜΑΧΗΣ** Manichee

**ΜΑΧΗΣ** martyr

**ΜΑΧΗΣ**
to whip

**ΜΑΧΗΣ**
to meditate, practise

**ΜΑΧΗΣ**
meditation, religious practice (fem.)

**ΜΑΧΗΣ**
member, limb of body (masc.)

**ΜΑΧΗΣ**
allocted sharc (fem.)

**ΜΑΧΗΣ** part (masc.)

**ΜΑΧΗΣ, ΜΑΧΗΣ** to repent

**ΜΑΧΗΣ** to share, take part

**ΜΑΧΗΣ**
(adv.) hardly

**ΜΑΧΗΣ**
monk

**ΜΑΧΗΣ**
only-begotten

**ΜΑΧΗΣ**
(adv.) only, but

**ΜΑΧΗΣ**
form (fem.)

**ΜΑΧΗΣ**
the Holy Sacrament

Proper Names:

**ΜΑΧΗΣ** Matthew

**ΜΑΧΗΣ** Mammon

**ΜΑΧΗΣ** Mani

**ΜΑΧΗΣ** Mark

**ΜΑΧΗΣ** Mary

**ΜΑΧΗΣ** Mesopotamia (top.)

**ΜΑΧΗΣ** Michael

**ΜΑΧΗΣ** Moses
GLOSSARY 229

N (NI)

---

See eine "to bring".

Na
to pity, have mercy (216b). p-na to do charity.

Nānā act of charity, mercy.

Na
Stative of eve and noy "to be about to", "to go".

Noy
to be about to . . . (219a); stative na "(is) about to . . .".

Noyb
gold (masc.) (221b).

Nobe
Sin (inasc.) (222a).

Nāht
Merciful person.

Nāiat-
"is blessed" (74b); see eia, eiat-.

Noeik
Adulterous person (222b). p-noeik to commit adultery, fornicate.

Naka
Thing (223a).

Nkonk
To lie down, sleep (224a). hā nkonk bed.

Nama
(adv.) truly (157a).

Noyne
Root (fem.) (227b).

Noyte
god (230b). p-noyte God.

Nt-
See eine "to bring".

Nay
to see (233b); nay eβol to be able to see, have eyesight.

(with art.) sight, view.

Nay
time, hour (masc.) (243b).

Nhy
Stative of e1 "to come".

Nηβοτ
to be hard, severe (237a); stative nawt- "(is) harsh, severe".

(with art.) hardness, severity, nawt- "hard of . . ." in compounds; nawtqtht obdurate.

Nipe
to blow, breathe (238b); presuffixal naqet-

Nopqe
Advantage, benefit (fem.) (239b). p-nopqe to be of advantage, beneficial.

Nēz
Oil (masc.) (240b).

Noyz
Rope (masc.) (241a).

Nagē
Shoulders, upper back, neck (fem.) (243a).
NAΣΤΕ to trust, entrust, believe (264a); stative ENΣΙΟΣ "(is) trustworthy"
NOΓΧ false, lying (246b)
NAΛΛΕ see NAΛΞΕ
NOΓΧΕ to throw (ΞΟΛΟΣ out) (247a); prenominal NEΧ-, presuffixal NOΧ-, stative ΝΗΧ (ε-) "(is) thrown upon, relying on"
NAΛΞΕ, NAΛΛΕ tooth (fem.) (249b)
ΝΟΘ big, great (250a)
ΝΟΘΝΕΘ to mock, reproach (252b)
(with art.) reproach
NOΓΘΗ to be angry, annoyed with (252b)
†-NOΓΘΗ to give cause for anger

ΝΗΡΟΣ island (fem.)
ΝΗΡΣΕΙΑ fast (fem.)
ΝΗΡΣΕΓΕ to fast
ΝΟΙΕΙ, ΝΟΙ to grasp, understand
ΝΟΜΟΣ law; Π-ΝΟΜΟΣ the Law
ΝΥΜΦΙΟΣ bridegroom (masc.)
ΕΝΟΣΟΝ, ENΘΣΟΝ (adv., conj.) as long as

PROPER NAMES:
NAΘΟΥΧΟΝΟΝΟΣ Nebuchadnezzar
NAΖΑΡΕΘ Nazareth (top.)
ΝΟΑ Noah

3 (XI)

0 (OU)

O stative of ΕΙΡΕ to do
ΟΒΕ see ΕΙΒΕ
ΟΒΘ tooth (fem.) (254a)
ΟΕΙΚ bread (masc.) (254a)
ΟΜΕ clay (masc.) (254b)
ΟΝΘ stative of ΩΜΘ to live
ΟΞΕ damage, loss, fine (masc.) (256b)
†-ΟΞΕ to suffer damage, be fined
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Word</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>οἰω</td>
<td>cry. proclamation (257b); in ταυς - οἰω to cry, proclaim</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
| ος | see ἀλα
| ος | moon (masc.) (257b) |
| ος | sheepfold (masc.) (258a) |
| ζωολος | obol (currency of small denomination) (masc.) |
| οικοδομη | construction, building (fem.) |
| τοικουμενη | the inhabited world (fem.) |
| ζωας | (adv.) at all |
| ζωηλει, ζωηλει | to preach, communicate |
| ζωηλορει | to confess |
| ζωηως | (adv.) nevertheless |
| ζωηοογιοος/ος | of the same essence, substance |
| ονομαζε | to call by name, mention |
| οντως | (adv.) in fact, in reality, truly |
| οργη | rage, fury (fem.) |

π (PI)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Word</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>πε</td>
<td>sky, heaven (fem.) (259a); plur. πνυμε</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τπε</td>
<td>upper part; ἀνατπε up (adv.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πωωνε</td>
<td>to overturn, change (263b); stative πονε “(is overturned)”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πρω</td>
<td>winter (fem.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πτερε, πεπτε</td>
<td>to come out (of sun), shine (266b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πωπρε</td>
<td>to dream (268a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πεπραγογ</td>
<td>to foretell the future by dreams</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πωρκ, πωρεκ</td>
<td>to pluck, root out (268b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πωρογ</td>
<td>to spread (with επολα) (269a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πρω</td>
<td>mat, spread (271a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πωρα</td>
<td>to separate; to be separated (with επολα) (271b); stative πορα “(is) distinct from (ε-)” (with art.) separation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πατ</td>
<td>foot, leg, knee (fem.) (273b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πωτ</td>
<td>to run (274a); with ἀνα- to pursue; stative πντ “(is) running”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ποογ</td>
<td>today (731); see ζοογ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>πνω</td>
<td>trap, snare (masc.) (277a)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
GLOSSARY

παρε  to divide, split (277a)
παρε to be stupefied, amazed (279b)
(with art.) amazement
παφ to tear, break (280a); pronominal παφ-, presuffixal παφ-

πάφε drug, medicament, cure (fem.) (282b)
†-πάφε to threaten medically, cure

παφε be treated medically, be cured
πωρ to bend, throw down (also reflexive): (with πωρ) to pour, shed (283a); presuffixal πωρ-

παλωγ back, hind part (284b)
παλωγ behind

ποδε piece (fem.) (286a)
ποδε spittle (fem.) (286b)

νεκ to spit


παθος passion (masc.)
παλαγε to chastize, educate
τ-παλαγε (διαθέκη) the Old Testament

παλαγε (adv.) again (usually with on)

π-παντοκράτωρ the Almighty

παντωσ (adv.) certainly, by all means

παρά to transgress

παρί to pass

παρατειν, παριτι to entreat, beg

παράκλητε to invoke, call upon

π-παράκλητος the Intercessor, Paraclete

παρανομος lawbreaker, wrongdoer

παράπτωμα false step, transgression

παράφυσις perversion (fem.)

παρθένος virgin

παρίκτα to stand by, assist

παρθέκνα freedom, openness of speech

πατακέ to strike, smite

πεισε to persuade; to be persuaded, comply

πεισμος, πεισμος trial, temptation (masc.)

πεισμος, πεισμος to test, try

πελαγος high sea (masc.)

πετρα rock (fem.)

πεκ see χριστος

πηγη fountain, spring (fem.)
| **πίστευε** | to believe, have faith |
| **πίστις** | faith (fem.) |
| **πίστος** | faithful |
| **πλάνα** | to lead astray |
| **πλανή** | error, going astray (fem.) |
| **πλάσσει** | to shape, form |
| **τε-πλατωνική διασκεδασία** | the Platonic Teaching |
| **πλήν** | to strike, wound |
| **πλήνη** | blow, wound (fem.) |
| **πνεύμα** | see πνεύμα |
| **πνεύμα, πνα** | spirit (masc.) |
| **πνεύματικός/ος** | spiritual |
| **πνοή** | breath (fem.) |
| **πολέμος** | war, quarrel (masc.) |
| **πόλεμος** | to fight |
| **πόλις** | city, town (fem.) |
| **πονηρία** | wickedness (fem.) |
| **πονηρος/ον** | wicked |
| **πορνεύει** | to fornicate |
| **πορνή** | prostitute (fem.) |
| **πορνος** | prostitute (masc.) |
| **ποσεων** | (adv.) how much more |
| **πράγμα** | affair, work (masc.) |
| **πράξις** | deed, act (fem.) |
| **πρεσβύτης** | elder |
| **πρεσβυτερος** | elder, presbyter |
| **προνοία** | providence (fem.) |
| **προσεχε** | to pay attention, mind |
| **προστάγμα** | ordainment (masc.) |
| **προσφορά** | offering (fem.) |
| **προφήτης** | prophet |
| **πύλη** | gate (fem.) |
| **πύργος** | tower (masc.) |

**PROPER NAMES:**

- **τ-πανος**
  - in τπολις ττανος Panopolis (Akhmim) (top.)
- **π-πασχα**
  - Easter
  - ΠΝΟ6 ΠΠΑΣΧΑ Easter Sunday
Glossary

παυλός Paul
πετέβε Petbe (Egyptian deity)
πέτρος Peter
πψωι Pshoi
πτάς Ptah (Egyptian deity)

p (RO)

πνή the sun (masc.) (287a)
ροο door, mouth (masc.) (288a); possessed ρω (mouth)
κα-ρω to be silent, refrain from talking
ρω- sec ρο
ρικε to bend, turn (291a)
(with art.) turning, inclination; difference
ρωκε to burn (293a); presuffixal ροκε, stative ροκε
"(is) burning"
(with art.) burning, extreme heat
ριμε to weep (294a)
(with art.) weeping
ρηειν tear (fem.) (294b); plur. ρειεωγε
ρωμε man, person; someone, anyone (with zero art.)
(294b)
ρη(η)- "man of-" (with noun or placename)
ρεη- "er" (agent noun, with verb)
ρηόμαο rich person (296a)
ρομπε year (fem.) (296b)
τρομπε (adv.) yearly
ρηςε free person (297a)
ραν name (masc.) (297b); possessed ρντ-
ριρ swine, pork (masc.) (299a)
ρρο king (299a); plur. ρρωγυ
fem. ρρω queen
μντερο kingdom
ρνσ south (masc.) (299b)
ρνείκ to be awake, be vigilant (300b); stative ρνσ "(is)
vigilant"
ρακωγ dream (fem.) (302b)
ρατ- foot (possessed form) (302b)
epat (prep.) to (person, with verbs of motion)
2apid (prep.) under foot of underneath

pwat
to grow, sprout (303b); stative pwat "(is) in
growth"

pooye
stalk of corn (fem.) (306b)

pooyt
see oyrot

pooyw
care (masc.) (306b)
q1-p0oyw (2a-) care for

paoy
mild, gentle in ñpaoy mild, gentle person
(308a)

paoye
to rejoice (308b)
(with art.) joy

pwoye
to suffice; to be authorized, responsible

royye
evening (310b)

pwart
to strike; to be struck, fall (311a); presuffixal

PROPER NAMES:

pakote
Alexandria (top.)

pete
Rebecca

c (SIMMA)

c1
side (masc.) (313a)
c2
to be beautiful (315a)
(with art.) comeliness, beauty
cce
"yes" (316a)
cce
sixty (368b)
c1, cce
to be sated, have enough (316b)
(with art.) satiety
c0
in ↑-co to spare, refrain (with e-) (317a)
c0
six (368b)
c0w
to drink (318a); prenominal cee-, presuffixal
c00-
(with art.) drink
cow
reed mat (318a)
case
wise, clever person (319a); plur. caseey, caseoy
cash
wise, clever woman
GLOSSARY

cwbe to laugh, mock (320b) (with art.) laughter, mockery
cbw teaching, wisdom (fem.) (319b); plur. cwooye
†-cbw to teach
xi-cbw to be taught
cbsce to circumcise (321b) (with art.) circumcision
atcsbsce uncircumcised
cbok to be small (322a); stative cobsk "(is) small"
cobt wall (masc.) (323a)
cobte to prepare (323a); stative caktu "(is) prepared"
cwbd to be, become leprous (324a)
cwjk to draw; to flow (325a); prenominal cek-
pre suffixal cok-
cilee to grind, mill (328a)
ājīcike millstone
ckai to plough (328b)
ckim grey hair (328b)
ckopkū to roll (329a); stative ckkopkū "(is) rolled, curled up"
colen to comfort, encourage (332a)
cmhn voice (fem.) (334b)
cmhou to bless (with e-); stative cmhau "(is) blessed" (with art.) blessing
cmine to establish, set right (337a); stative chontū "(is)
established, set right"
chontū stative of cmine
choh form, character (340b)
csein doctor (masc.) (342b)
cankotō see kōtō
con brother (masc.) (342b). male companion; plur.
̓cimny brethren
c unw sister, female companion (fem., ibid.)
coone robber (masc.) (344b)
counṭ price, value (possessed) (369b)
cwntū to create (345a); prenominal nt-(with art.) creation
cūte two (fem.) (346b)
cnay two (346b)
cnooye two, in compound mūncnooye twelve (347a)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Glossary Term</th>
<th>Definition</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥānḥ</td>
<td>to nourish (347b); prenominal ṣḥānḥ-, ṣḥānḥ-; presuffixal ṣḥānḥ-, stative ṣḥānḥ̣- &quot;(is) nourished, well-fed&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥōwγ</td>
<td>blood (masc.) (348a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥṇṇ</td>
<td>to bind, put in fetters (348b); presuffixal ṣḥṇ̣-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥṇ</td>
<td>occasion, time (masc.) (349b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥṇṇṇ</td>
<td>to entreat (352b); presuffixal ṣḥṇṇṇ-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥṇṭoγ</td>
<td>lips, shore, edge (353a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥ̣p̣</td>
<td>to spread, scatter (353b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥ̣p̣ye</td>
<td>thorn (Fem.) (354a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥ̣p̣̣ṭ</td>
<td>stative of ṣḥ̣q̣e</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥ̣p̣̣̣̣</td>
<td>to dazzle, confuse, obscure (356a); presuffixal ṣḥ̣p̣̣̣̣ẉṃ-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥ̣q̣e</td>
<td>to be at leisure (357a); stative ṣḥ̣p̣̣ṭ. ṣḥ̣q̣ṭ- &quot;(is) at leisure&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥ̣ẹit</td>
<td>fame, reputation (masc.) (359a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥ̣ẹit</td>
<td>†- ṣḥ̣ẹit to be famous</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥ̣ẉ̣̣̣̣</td>
<td>see ṣḥ̣ṭ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥ̣ṭ</td>
<td>repeat (with e-) (360a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥ̣ṭ</td>
<td>a measure of land (360a) in ṣḥ̣ẉ̣̣̣̣ a small measure of tilled land (fem.) (89b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥ̣ṭẹ</td>
<td>to save, redeem (362a); presuffixal ṣḥ̣ṭ-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥ̣ṭẹ</td>
<td>cot-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥ̣ṭbeq̣</td>
<td>tool, weapon (363b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥ̣ṭbeq̣</td>
<td>cotbeq̣ ṣḥ̣beq̣ weapon</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥ̣ṭ̣̣̣</td>
<td>to hear, listen (with e-), obey (with ṣḥ̣a-). (363b); presuffixal coṭ̣̣̣-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥ̣ṭo</td>
<td>see ṣḥ̣ṭo</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥ̣ṭ̣̣̣</td>
<td>obedient</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥ̣ṭ̣̣̣̣</td>
<td>to choose, prefer (365a); stative coṭ̣̣̣- &quot;(is) preferable&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥ̣̣̣̣̣̣̣̣</td>
<td>to tremble (366b) (with art.) trembling</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥ̣̣̣̣̣̣̣̣</td>
<td>stative of ṣḥ̣ṭo, ṣḥ̣o</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥ̣y</td>
<td>time (masc.) (367b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥ̣ỵ</td>
<td>star (masc.) (368a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥ̣ỵ</td>
<td>six (368b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥ̣ỵ</td>
<td>corn, wheat (masc.) (369a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥ̣ỵ̣̣̣̣̣̣̣</td>
<td>bath (369b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ṣḥ̣ỵ̣̣̣̣̣̣̣</td>
<td>to know (369b); prenominal coṭ̣̣̣-; presuffixal coṭ̣̣̣̣̣̣̣-</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
cουντ- price (possessed) (369b)
cιουρ eunuch (371a)
cουντη to stretch, straighten, uphold (371a); presuffixal
cουντη- stative cουντη "(is) upright, established"
cωουγ to gather, assemble (with εγων) (372a): stative
cωουγ- "(is) assembled"
(with art.) gathering, assembly
cου to despise (375a); presuffixal cου- stative
cου- "(is) despised, despicable"
cαυε to be, become bitter (376b); stative cαυε "(is)
bitter"
(with art.) bitterness
cουε to creep, crawl (376b)
cουε field (fem.) (377a)
cουη- to stop, impede (377b)
cαη- seven (378a)
cουη to despise (376a); presuffixal cουη-
cαη yesterday (378b)
(adv.) ηεαη yesterday
cουη to defile, be impure (378b); stative cουη "(is)
defiled, impure"
cιγες sword (fem.) (379a)
cου deaf person (379b)
cουε to remove (380a), reflexive; prenominal cαγε-,
presuffixal cαγω-
cα to write (381b); presuffixal cα-, cα- stative
cι "(is) written"
cαγε provision, management (masc.) (385b)
cογε- cαγε to bid, instruct
(with art.) instruction
cαγουρε stative of cαγοу
cαγοу to curse (387a); prenominal cαγου- cαγε-
presuffixal cαγουαρ- stative cαγουρε "(is)
cursed"
cιμε woman, wife (385a); plur. cιμε
сαβ fool (388a)
cαμηρ to sail, wander (388b)
cαραρη to rest oneself (389b)
Sabbath (masc.)
Seraphim
of the flesh
flesh (fem.)
Satan
to cause to stumble, give offence
offence (masc.)
to joke
body (masc.)
bodily, of flesh, physical
the Saviour
wisdom (fem.)
wise
to lead a wanton life, live lewdly
to be eager, busy, earnest
zeal, earnest, eagerness (fem.)
cross (masc.)
to strip bare, plunder
assembly, synagogue (fem.)
custom, habit (fem.)
to present oneself
consummation, end (fem.)
to be in agreement
seal (fem.)
monk’s habit (masc.)
Sabbath
Sarepta, Zarephath (top.)
Sarah
Satan
Sergios
Seth
Shem
Simon
Shenoute
Sodom (top.)
Spuadios
GLOSSARY

\( T (\ Tau) \)

\( \dagger \)

to give, cause (392a); prenominal \( \dagger \)- presuffixal
\( \tau \alpha \alpha \alpha \), stative \( \tau o \) "(is) given"; imperative \( \text{MA} \). \( \dagger \)
\( \dagger \)- active deriving auxiliary

\( \tau o \)

share, part (fem.) (396a)

\( \chi i \)-\( to \) to share

\( \tau w \, \epsilon t w \)

"How can you compare ...?" (396b)

\( \tau a i \epsilon \epsilon \epsilon \)

chest (fem.) (397a)

\( \tau \eta \eta \eta \epsilon \epsilon \epsilon \)

finger (masc.) (397b)

\( \tau w\, \omega \beta \epsilon \epsilon \epsilon \)

to repay, requite (398b)
(with art.) requital, revenge

\( \tau \beta \alpha \)

ten thousand (399a)

\( \tau \beta \beta \omega \alpha \)

to purify, hallow (399b); prenominal \( \tau \beta \beta \epsilon \epsilon \alpha \)-;
presuffixal \( \tau \beta \beta \omega \alpha \) - stative \( \tau \beta \beta \eta \eta \) "(is) pure"
(with art.) purity

\( \tau \beta \nu \eta \eta \)

beast, cattle (400b); plur. \( \tau \beta \eta \eta \eta \eta \eta \epsilon \epsilon \)

\( \tau \beta \epsilon \eta \)

fish (401b)

\( \tau w b \ddot{\epsilon} \)

to entreat, pray (402a)

\( \tau \alpha \delta \, \tau \alpha \delta \alpha \)

to honour, glorify (390b); prenominal \( \tau \alpha \epsilon \epsilon \)-;
stative \( \tau \alpha \eta \eta \alpha \) "(is) honoured"

\( \tau w k \)

to be firm, strong (403a)

\( \tau w k \, \tilde{\eta} \tilde{\gamma} \tilde{\iota} \) to take courage

\( \tau \alpha \kappa o \)

to destroy; to perish (405a)

\( \tau w k \, \tilde{k} \)

do draw (sword) (406a); stative \( \tau k \, \tilde{k} \) "(is) drawn"

\( \tau k \kappa \epsilon \epsilon \)

pain, disease (masc.) (407a)

\( \tau \alpha \alpha \alpha \)

to mount, ascend (408a)

\( \tau \omega \alpha \tilde{m} \)

to defile (410b); stative \( \tau o \tilde{m} \) "(is) defiled"

\( \tau \ell \alpha \epsilon \epsilon \)

drop (411b)

\( \tau \alpha \alpha \delta \)

to heal (411b)

\( \tau w \alpha m \)

to shut (up); to be shut (up) (412b); stative \( \text{THM} \) 
"(he) shup up"
(with art.) obtuseness

\( \dagger \text{TH} \epsilon \)

town, village (414a) (masc.)

\( \tau \alpha \mu \iota \iota \)

to create (413a); prenominal \( \tau \alpha \iota \epsilon \epsilon \)-; stative
\( \tau \alpha \mu \iota \eta \eta \) "(is) created"
(with art.) creation

\( \tau \mu \alpha \mu \)

to inform, tell (413b); prenominal \( \tau \mu \epsilon \epsilon \)-, pre-
suffixal \( \tau \mu \alpha \mu \)-
GLOSSARY

τμαίο to justify (415b); stative τμαίνω "(is) justified"
τμή to feed, nourish (416a)
τωσώμε to be fitting, appropriate (414b); stative τωσμε "(is) appropriate"
τωμή to bury (416a); presuffixal τωμη-
-τί to quarrel, dispute (418a)
τιν see τωρε
των (adv.) where? Whence? (417b)
τενόγ (adv.) now (485a)
τοντί to be like, resemble (420a); stative τοντων "(is) like"
τὴνοογ to send (419b)
τίν wing (masc.) (421a)
τανζο to keep alive, nourish (421a); prenominal τανζε-
presuffixal τανζο-
τανζογτ to trust, entrust (421b); presuffixal τανζογτ-
τοπ fold, lap (masc.) (422a)
†τε to taste (fem.) (423a)
τωπε to taste (423a); prenominal τεπ-
ταπρο mouth (fem.) (423b)
τηρ on all of ..., the whole of ... (424a)
πτηρο the All, the Universe (adv.) επτηρο at all
τωρε hand (fem.) (425a); possessed τη-/τοοτ-
ετη-/ετοοτ- (prep.) "to (the hand of ...)",
ητη-/ητοοτ- (prep.) "in the hands of ...",
ζητη-/ζετοοτ- (prep.) "by (the hand of ...")
τωρπ to seize, rob, plunder (430b)
(with art.) plunder
τριπ oven (fem.) (431b)
τρέπε to tremble (431b)
τρόπομε see τρομε
τοτπ to pierce (432b)
tco to let drink (434a)
tcio to satisfy (also reflexive) (434a)
tcaso to teach, enlighten (434b)
tcase- eiat- to enlighten
GLOSSARY

tcto, cto to reject, repulse, turn out (436a); presuffixal
tcto-; stative τcthys "(is) rejected"
tow to agree, be content (437b)
toote- see twpe
tto to cause to give; prenominal tte-
thy wind (masc.) (439b)
taiog fifty (440b)
‡toy five (440b)
tooy hill (masc.) (440b)
tayo to send, put forth; to tell (441b)
tooye shoe (masc.) (443b)
toyw- bosom (possessed) (444b)
πετζιτογw- (one's) neighbour
twogn to arise, stand up (445a)
toynoc to raise, set up (446b); prenominal toyne-
tayo to increase, multiply (452b)
toy xo to save (448b); prenominal toy xe-, presuffixal
toy xo-
taxyo to strengthen, make firm (462b)
tow to appoint, determine, ordain (449b)
(with art.) vocation, ordainment
twz chaff (masc.) (453b)
twz to mingle, meddle, disturb (453b); presuffixal
tzw-
tazo to meet, happen; to make to stand (with epat-)
(455a)
‡ze to be, become drunk (456b); stative τζε "(is)
drunk"
θo to be spoiled, become bad (457a)
twz to call, summon (458b)
twbe to fix, plant (464a)
toioi to disgrace, condemn (465b); prenominal
toioi-, presuffixal τοιοι-, stative τοιοι
"(is) disgraced, condemned"

ταξυ, ταξη (adv.) quickly
ταλαίπωρος miserable person
ταμειον, ταμιον inner chamber, private room
ταφος grave (masc.)
tελωνιον custom-house (masc.)
TEKH
TEKHNHE
TELEWSNC
TIMUPIA
TOLMA
TOPOC
TOPE
TAPNEZA
TRIA
TRPOFH
TYPANHOC

TEKHNI
TEKHNITEC
TELEWSHEC
TIMUPIAC
TOLMA
TOPOC
TOPE
TAPNEZAC
TRIA
TRPOFH
TYPANHOC

craft, skill, profession (fem.)
artisan, craftsman
tax-collector
punishment, retribution (fem.)
to dare
holy place, shrine (masc.)
(adv.) then
table (fem.)
trinity
d the Holy Trinity
nourishment (fem.)
tyrant

PROPER NAMES:
TAZOM, TAZOH
TARPINHOC
TIMOBSOC

Tahom (fem. name)
Taurinus
Timothy

OY, Y (HE): Native OY-, Greek ΟΥ- or Υ-

OYA
OYAYA
OY
OYES
OYW
OYW

blasphemy (masc.) (468b)
to blaspheme
one (masc.) (469a)
to be distant, far (470b); stative ΟΥΗ (is)
distant
(adv.) επογε far
one (fem.) (469a)
to have already done, finish doing (473b)
to bud, blossom (475a)
to sprout, begin to blossom
(with art.) sprouting, blossoming
stative of ΟΥΠ
priest (masc.) (488a)
to be, become white (476a)
(with art.) whiteness
woe (lo ..., with Ν-/ΝΑ-) (472b)
husbandsman (masc.) (473a)
light (masc.) (480a)
to brighten, light up
to flourish, be well off (477a); stative ΟΥΟΕΗ
"(is) flourishing"
ογωμ

to eat (478a); prenominal ογωμ·-
manger (masc.)

ογωμή
(any)thing/(any) one, (some)thing/(some)one
(482a)

ογων

to open (482b); stative ογων "(is) open(cd)"

ογεινε

to pass by, lapse (483b)

ογνογ

hour (fem.) (484a); with definite article
(adv.) τενογ now

ογν.

"there is"; statement of existence (481a)

ογντᾱ

"(he) has"; possession verboid (481a); prenominal
ογντε-

ογωνηγ

wolf (masc.) (485b)

ογνοη

to rejoice (485b)
(with art.) joy, gladness

ογωνῳ
(with εβολ) to make appear, manifest, show
(also reflexive): to appear (486a); presuffixal
ογωνς·, stative ογωνς "(is) manifest, apparent"

ογωπ

to be, become pure, holy (487a); stative ογωπα
"(is) holy"

ογροτ

to be glad, eager (490a); stative ογροτ "(is)
glad" (with art.) gladness, eagerness, zeal

ογερνετε

foot (fem.) (491a)

ογοειω

time (masc.) (499a)

ογωψ

to wish, desire, love (500a): prenominal ογωψ·,
presuffixal ογωψ·
(with art.) wish, will, desire

ογων

night (fem.) (502a); with definite art. τενογν;
plur. ογωνγν

ογωνή

to answer (502a)

ογωνήτ
(with ἡ/η-) to worship (504a)

ογωνῆς

to crush; to be crushed, worn down (505a)

ογως

to add (with ε-/ετος), lay; to stay, dwell, be
settled; to follow (with ἡκα-) (505a); prenominal
ογες·, presuffixal ογας·, stative ογης "(is)
settled, dwells, follows"

ογωςῆ

to repeat, answer, do again (509a)
(adv.) Νογωςη again

ογωςη

dog (510a); with definite art. πενογη; plur.

ογωςη

to be safe, sound (511b); stative ογως "(is)
safe"
GLOSSARY

ογόβε check, jaw (512a)
ογόβο doorpost (masc.)

ογ γοθον (adv.) not only
γαν matter, stuff (fem.)
γαναρποντα (plur.) possessions
γανεκρικικ pretence
γανενειν to suffer, endure, submit
γανεθονον endurance, submission (fem.)
γανεπεγε to suspect
γαναταγη submission, submissiveness (fem.)
ογσια essence (fem.)

ϕ (PHI) (no Egyptian lexemes)

ϕανερον (adv.) evidently, obviously
ϕαντασία fantasy (fem.)
ϕαρισαιος Pharisee
ϕηνει to envy, begrudge
ϕηνος envy (masc.)
ϕόρει to carry
ϕυσικη nature (fem.)
ϕωνη voice (fem.)

PROPER NAMES:

ϕανουγια Phenuel
ϕαραω Pharao

κ (KHI) (no Egyptian lexemes)

καρις grace (fem.)
καρα widow (fem.)
κειδα, κεια need, exigency (fem.)
κειδα to be in need
κρηνα property (plur.)
κρηστος, κριςτος good, kind
κρηστιανος Christian

και in περια = περικριςτος Christ
\( \chiωρα \) \hspace{1em} \text{country, land, region (fem.)}

\( \chiωρις \) \hspace{1em} \text{(prep.) without, apart from}

**PROPER NAMES:**

\( \chiοχσορος \) \hspace{1em} \text{Chosserous (a high official)}

\( \chiρησίππος \) \hspace{1em} \text{Chresippus}

\( \psi \) \hspace{1em} \text{(PSI) (no Egyptian lexemes)}

\( \psiλλαξει \) \hspace{1em} \text{to sing, recite hymns}

\( \psiλαθριον \) \hspace{1em} \text{psalter (masc.)}

\( \psiγχα \) \hspace{1em} \text{soul (fem.)}

\( \omega \) \hspace{1em} \text{(O = O MEGA)}

\( \omegaβω \) \hspace{1em} \text{to forget, overlook (518b)}

\( \omegaκκ \) \hspace{1em} \text{to swallow (523a); presuffixal \( \omegaκ\) -}

\( \omegaμκ \) \hspace{1em} \text{to be sunk, drown (523a); presuffixal \( \omegaκ\) -}

\( \omegaνε \) \hspace{1em} \text{stone (524a) (masc.)}

\( \omegaνη \) \hspace{1em} \text{to live (525a); stative \( \omegaη\) "(is) alive"}

\( \omegaπ \) \hspace{1em} \text{to count, count as, consider (526a); prenominal}

\( \epsilon\pi\) - , presuffixal \( \epsilon\pi\) - , stative \( \eta\pi\) "(is) numbered, counted, considered"

\( \omegaπδ \) \hspace{1em} \text{to enclose, shut in, set apart; to be enclosed, be apart, secluded (528a)}

\( \omegaπκ \) \hspace{1em} \text{to swear (529a)}

\( \omegaπκ\chi \) \hspace{1em} \text{to be firm, be confirmed, real (530a)}

\( \text{(with art.) firmness, assurance, reality} \)

\( \omegaκκ \) \hspace{1em} \text{to delay (530a)}

\( \omegaω \) \hspace{1em} \text{to read (out), call (out) (533a); prenominal \( \epsilon\omega\) - ,}

\( \omega\omega\) - , presuffixal \( \omega\omega\) -

\( \omega\omega\) - \( \omega\omega\) to sigh

\( \omega\omega\) - \( \kappa\kappa\) to shout

\( \omega\omega\) \hspace{1em} \text{to quench; to be quenched, extinguished (with}

\( \epsilonβωλ\) (535a)}

\( \omega\psi\) \hspace{1em} \text{to fix, nail (536a); stative \( \omega\psi\) "(is) fixed, nailed"}

\( \omega\zeta\) \hspace{1em} \text{(with \( \epsilon\pi\) - \( \omega\pi\) - \( \epsilon\pi\) - \( \omega\pi\) - to stand (up) (536a)}

\( \omega\zeta\) \hspace{1em} \text{to reap, harvest (538b); presuffixal \( \omega\zeta\) -}
**Glossary**

**ωξι**

to expire, lapse, cease (539a)

**ωφελεία**

use, advantage, benefit (fem.)

**PROPER NAMES:**

Σωτήρης

Origène

**ψ (SHAI)**

ψ-, εψ- to be able to (541a)

ψα to shine, rise (of the sun) (542b)

ψα festival (masc.) (543a)

θ-ψα to celebrate

ψα nose (masc.) (543b); possessed ψαντ-

ψε to go (544a); stative ىا "(is) going"

ψεψε it behoves, it is befitting

ψεψεψε to be drowned

ψε wood (masc.) (546a)

ψε a hundred (546b)

ψι to measure (547b)

(with art.) measure

ψιςε to change; to be changed, to differ (551a); stative

ψοςε "(is) different"

ψβεψεψεψε repayment, exchange (fem.) (552b)

ψβηρ friend, mate (masc.) (553a); plur. ωτις; fem.

ψβεψεψε ωτ- co- (or -mate), in compounds

ψββεψεψε ωτ- to be scorched (554a); stative ωτοςε (is) scor-

chéd"

ψκα ψκα cry, shout (556a)

ψκα to cry out, shout (ψψ)

ψκα to plunder (557b); presuffixal ωτ-

ψκα to pray (559a)

ψελεψεψεψε ωτ- bride (fem.) (560b)

ψλοψ ωτ- wedding

ψλοψ ωτ- disgrace (masc.) (561b)

ψσμ small person, amount: small (563a)

ψσμ summer (masc.) (564b)

ψσμo strange person, stranger (565b)
ψῆμω
ψωμὶ, ψωμίτ
ψηψε
ψιν
ψινε
ψινε
ψαντ-  
ψομτε
ψνω
ψωπ
ψινε
ψινε
ψηπρε
ψαιρε
ψηρε
ψεερε
ψωρπ
ψωρψφ
ψωσκ
ψεανε
ψτορτφ

stranger (fem.)
three (566b)
(fem.) ψομτε
to serve, worship (567a)
tree (masc.) (568b)
to ask, inquire, seek (with ἰκα-) (569a)
to be, become ill (570b)
(with art.) disease
ψαν-2τη-, ψεν-2τη-, ψη-2τη- (to be) ill at heart, pitying
ψαντ-  see ψα nose
ψομτε
thorn (fem.) (573a)
ψνω
stink (573b)
ψωπ
to receive, accept (574b); prenominal ψη- ψεν-, presuffixal ψον-, stative ψηπ "(is) acceptable"
ψινε
to be ashamed (576b)
(with art.) shame
ψπινε to put to shame
ψψινε
to happen, take place; to become, come into existence (577b); stative ψοντ "(is) in existence"
ψηπρε
wonder, cause for amazement (fem.) (581a)
ψαιρε
to strike (583b)
ψαιερε
sheepfold (fem.) (584a)
ψηρε
son (masc.) (584a)
ψηρε ψηρ child, son
ψεερε
daughter (fem.) (584a)
ψεερε ψηρ child, girl
ψωρπ
(to be early; to do as first, do first (586a)
(with art.) dawn, early morning
ψωρπ, ψφπ- ψη- first (587a)
(adv.) ἵψωρπ, ψορπ at first
ψφπ- to do first, early
ψορψφ
to wreck, destroy (589a); prenominal ψφψφ-, presuffixal ψψψψ-
ψωσκ
shepherd (masc.) (589b)
ψεανε
in (adv.) ψεανε suddenly (589b)
ψτορτφ
to trouble; to be troubled (597b); stative ψτφτψφ "(is) troubled" -
(with art.) trouble
GLOSSARY

\( \nuw\nuw \) to cut, kill, sacrifice; to deprive; to be deprived, lack (590a); stative \( \nuw\nuw \) "(is) deprived, lacking" (with art.) cutting

(adv.) \( \nuw\nuw\nuw \) \( \nuw\nuw \) decisively

\( \nuw\nuw\nuw \) prison (masc.) (595b); plur. \( \nuw\nuw\nuw \)

\( \nuw\nuw\nuw \) to shut (595b); presuffixal \( \nuw\nuw\nuw \), stative \( \nuw\nuw\nuw \) "(is) shut"

\( \nuw\nuw\nuw \) to shut up; to be shut up (with \( \nuw\nuw\nuw \)

\( \nuw\nuw\nuw \) (596a)

\( \nuw\nuw\nuw \) worth, value (masc.) (599a)

\( \nuw\nuw\nuw \) to be, become dry (601b)

\( \nuw\nuw\nuw \) to flow; to empty; to be empty (602a); stative \( \nuw\nuw\nuw \) "(is) empty"

\( \nuw\nuw\nuw \) to scatter; to be scattered (603b)

(with art.) scattering

\( \nuw\nuw\nuw \) (reflexive) to pride oneself, boast (604a)

(with art.) pride

\( \nuw\nuw\nuw \) to lay waste; to be laid waste (609b)

(with art.) laying waste

\( \nuw\nuw\nuw \) impious, iniquitous person (611b)

\( \nuw\nuw\nuw \) to speak, talk (612a)

(with art.) word(s), speech

\( \nuw\nuw\nuw, \nuw\nuw\nuw \) to wrestle, struggle (615a)

\( \nuw\nuw\nuw \) to counsel; to take counsel (615b)

(with art.) counsel

\( \nuw\nuw\nuw \) to take, receive counsel

\( \nuw\nuw\nuw \) to be able, see \( \nuw\nuw\nuw \)

PROPER NAMES:

\( \nuw\nuw\nuw \) Shenoute

\( \nuw\nuw\nuw \) (FAI)

\( \nuw\nuw\nuw \) to carry, take (620a); prenominal \( \nuw\nuw\nuw \), presuffixal \( \nuw\nuw\nuw \)

\( \nuw\nuw\nuw \) \( \nuw\nuw\nuw \) to raise

(with art.) raising

\( \nuw\nuw\nuw \) worm (623b)

\( \nuw\nuw\nuw \) to wipe out (624a); prenominal \( \nuw\nuw\nuw \), presuffixal \( \nuw\nuw\nuw \)

\( \nuw\nuw\nuw \) four (625a)
2 (HORI)

2ae  last (occasion)
2an  end (fem.)
2e  to fall (637a)
2e_e  “yes” (64b)
2e  manner, way (fem.) (638b)
ēc, kataē as. like (“in the manner of... that...”)
(adv.) nēteīe thus, in this manner
nōw nēc how? (“in what manner?”)
2h  belly, inner part (642b); possessed 2ht-
2h  forepart, front (fem.) (640b)
(adv.) 2ah before
2h  way, road (fem.) (646a); plur. 2ioye
2o  face (masc.) (646b)
xi_2o to be prejudiced in favour, to be partial
to suffice (651a)
...2ow-  reinforcer: “... for (his) part”, “... he too”;
(651b), 1st sgl. 2w, 2owt, 2nd sgl. fem.
2ωwte
2wb  work, deed, affair, thing (abstract) (masc.)
(653a); plur. 2bhye
p-2wb to work
2ba  embarassment, misfortune (masc.) (656a)
2bw.  see 2oq
2boyp  left hand, left side (656b)
2bēc  lamp (masc.) (658a)
2wbc  to cover (with eXn-) (658a); prenominal 2εbc-
clothes, garment, linen (659b); plural 2bwbc
garment (fem.) (660a)
2bhye  plur. of 2wb
2ai  husband (masc.) (636b)
2ak  mild, sober person (660a)
2hke  poor person (664a)
2ko  to hunger (663b); stative 2kaiet “(is) hungry
2al  in p-2al to deceive, beguile (664b)
2wla  to fly (665b); stative 2ala “(is) flying”
2wla  to throw (666b); prenominal 2εla-
2oole  moth (667a)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ἀλαο</td>
<td>old man, old person (669b); plur. ἀλαοι</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀλω</td>
<td>old woman</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀλωοε</td>
<td>to nurse child (669a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀλοητ</td>
<td>fowl (masc.) (671a); plur. ἀλαετε, ἀλαετε</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀλοδ</td>
<td>to be, become sweet (673a); stative ἁλδ “(is) sweet” (with art.) sweetness</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀμ</td>
<td>to tread, trample (674b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀμοι</td>
<td>“Would that…!” (wish) (675a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀοιμε</td>
<td>plur. of ἀοιμε</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀοιμε’</td>
<td>forty (676a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀοιμε’</td>
<td>forty-three</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀογ</td>
<td>salt (masc.) (676b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀμε</td>
<td>heat, fever, heat (fem.) (677b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀμε</td>
<td>in ἑ-ἀμε to steer, guide (677b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀμοο &amp;</td>
<td>to sit, sit down (with ἐπαι), dwell (679a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀομη, ἀομη’</td>
<td>copper, money (678a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀοτ</td>
<td>grace, gift (masc.) (681a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀοηγ</td>
<td>ἁπ-ἀοτ ἄτο-ἀττατ- to thank</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀογα</td>
<td>slave, servant (665a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀογιν</td>
<td>inside part (685a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(adv.) ἀογιν inside, in</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀν</td>
<td>to draw near (with ἀογν) (687a); stative ἁν “(is) near”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀν</td>
<td>to bid, enjoin (with ἄν-/ἅττατ-) (688a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀνεμ</td>
<td>to doze, sleep (691a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀνα’ &amp; ἀνα’</td>
<td>“(is) willing” (690a); prenominal (ἐ)ἀνε’-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀνα’</td>
<td>to be willing</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀνο, ἀναγ</td>
<td>vessel, object, thing (concrete) (692b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀπ</td>
<td>law, judgement, sentence (masc.) (693b)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀπ</td>
<td>to hide (695a); prenominal ἅπ-, presuffixal ἁπ-; stative ἁπ “(is) hidden” (with art.) hiding</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀπ</td>
<td>food (fem.) (701a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀπ</td>
<td>see ἐπαι</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπαι, ἐπ</td>
<td>upper part (masc.) (698a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(adv.) ἐπαι up</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(adv.) ἐπαι above</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἐπαι</td>
<td>lower part (700a)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(adv.) ἐπαι down</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
GLOSSARY

2pēb  form, likeness (masc.) (701b)
     2pē to take form

2pok  to be still; to cease (702b)

2pooγ  voice (masc.) (704b); possessed 2pα-, plur.
     2pooγe
     2pα- to raise one's voice

2poy  to be, become heavy, difficult, severe (706a);
     stative 2poy “(is) heavy, difficult, severe”
     2poy-2ht long-suffering person
     to keep, guard (with ε-) (707b)

2poye2  in 2poye2 to be drowned (710a)

2pice  to toil, trouble (710a)
     (with art.) toil, suffering

2pt  silver (masc.) (713b)

2ht  heart (masc.) (714a); possessed 2ht-
     2ht stupid, 2ht clever

2ht-  see 2ht

2ieit  pit (718a)

2wt  in 2wt to sail (718b)

2ote  fear (fem.) (720b)
     2ote to fear

2œite  clothes, garment (fem.) (720b)

2wti  to murder (723b); prenominal 2eti, presuffixal
     2eti-

2wtii  to be reconciled (724b)

2th-  see 2ht heart

2to  horse (masc.) (723a); plur. 2towwp

2towtii  to be dulled, darkened (724a)

2wti  to be joined (726a); stative 2tii “(is) joined”

2top  necessity, compulsion (masc.) (726b)

2towwp  see 2to

2otet, 2otet  to inquire, examine (728a)

2hy  profit (masc.) (729a)
     †-2hy to profit

2iooye  see 21n

2ooy  day (masc.) (730a)
     (adv.) 2ooy today

2ooy  (stative) “(is) bad, evil” (731a)
     2ooy (noun) evil, “that which is evil”

2wowγ  to rain (732a)
     (with art.) rain
GLOSSARY

2ογίνε is rain (compound with πέ sky)
2ιογε to cast, strike (732b); prenominal 2ι-, presuffixal 2ι-
2ογο excess, surplus (masc.) (735a)
2ογείτε beginning, first occasion (fem.) (738a)
2οντ to do more, rather
2οντ to be in distress (740a); stative 2οντ "is in distress"
2ος snake (740b)
2ος many, much (741b)

For words of Greek origin beginning with 2, see under the second letter.

PROPER NAMES:

2ωψιγενής Origene
2ραββεί Rabbi (title)
2ρεβέκκα Rebecca

χ (DJANDJA)
χο vanity, emptiness (747b)
ηχοχον for no reason
ηχοχον in vain
χι to take, receive (747b); prenominal χι-, presuffixal
χι- χονε violence (ονε)
χορ see χο
χο to sow, send forth (752a)
χω to say (754a); prenominal χο-, χι-, presuffixal
χοο-; χοο "to say (it)"
χι-ογα to blaspheme
χι-δολ to lie
χω χο (possessed) head (756a)
χωκε coal (760a)
χιε desert (masc.) (745b)
χοεί, χοι ship, boat (masc.) (754a)
GLOSSARY

χωκ (with εβολα) to complete, accomplish; to be completed, perfect (761a); prenominal χεκ-, stative χηκ· “(is) accomplished, perfect”

χωκμ to wash (763a)

χοολες moth (fem.) (769a)

χαμη calm (fem.) (770a)

χωφης book (masc.) (770a)

χενα to be quenched, die out (774a)

χνογ ask (774b); prenominal χεγ-, presuffixal χνογ-

χυνογ threshing-floor, barn (masc.) (776b)

χαρ see χη

χπιο to blame, reproach (778b)

χπο to cause to exist, beget (778b); presuffixal χπο-

χωρ to sharpen, whet (781a)

(with art.) sharpness, edge

χερο to light, kindle fire (781b); prenominal χερε-

χωφρε (with εβολα) to scatter, disperse (782a); presuffixal χοφ-

χωφρε strong, brave person (784b)

χρο, βρο (with ε-) to be stronger, overcome, vanquish (783a)

χωρμ to beckon, signal (785b)

χρον, βρον obstacle, hindrance (masc.) (786b)

κα-χρον, τ-χρον to put an obstacle (before someone)

χωεις lord, master (787b)

πνωεις the Lord

χις to raise, exalt; to be, become tall, high (788b); stative χος· “(is) high, exalted”

(with art.) high part, height

(adv.) ενχις high

χαζης arrogant

χοεις olive tree, olive fruit (790b)

χωτε to pierce, traverse, enter (791b)

χιογε to steal (793b)

(with art.) stealth

(adv.) ηχιογε stealthily

χοογ to send forth, dispatch (793a)—
GLOSSARY

Χωσ to touch (797a)
Χωσί to defile; to be defiled (797b); stative Χωσί "(is) defiled"
(with art.) defilement, impurity
Χατε enemy (799b)

6 (CHIMA)

6ω to stay, remain, persist (803a)
6ωβ feeble, weak person (805b)
6αίε ugly, disfigured person (466a)
6ολ lie, falsehood; lye (806b)
Χι-6ολ to lie
6αλε cripple, lame person (807b)
6οσιλε, 6οιλε to dwell, sojourn (807b)
6λοβ bed (masc.) (815a)
6ομ power, potency, capability (fem.) (815b)
Ουν-6ομ/Μν-6ομ "it is possible"/"it is impossible"
Ατ6ομ impossible
(υ)6ινομ to be able, find the power (6ινε)
6ωμ vineyard, garden (817b)
6αμουλα camel (818b)
6ινε to find (820a); prenominal 6ι-, presuffixal 6ιτ-
6ονε violence, wrongdoing in Χιν6ονε to do wrong, do violence (822a)
6ωντ to rage, be furious (822b); stative 6οντ "(is) raging"
(with art.) rage
6εποι to make haste, hurry (825a)
(with art.) hurry
(adv.) Ζηνογεποι quickly
6ωπε to catch (825b); prenominal 6επο-, presuffixal 6οπ-
6ρο see Χρο
6ερςβ rod, stick (828a)
6ρομπε pigeon (828a); plur. 6ρομπε
6ροπ see Χροπ
6ερνμ hunter (masc.) (831a)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verb</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
<th>Reference(s)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ḫ̄w̄r̄ā</td>
<td>(with ε-) to waylay (830a); stative ḫ̄w̄r̄ā “(is) in ambush, is lurking”</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ḫr̄ōb̄</td>
<td>seed, sprouting of seed (masc.) (831b)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ḫr̄w̄2</td>
<td>to be in want, be needy (829b) (with art.) need</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ḫōc̄h̄</td>
<td>darkness (masc.) (832b)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ḫōt</td>
<td>size, form (833a)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ḫw̄w̄2̄</td>
<td>to look; to expect, wait for (with ḫ̄b̄ōλ̄ ܢܛܐ)</td>
<td>(837)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ḫ2̄ḡ2̄</td>
<td>to gnash (teeth) (with art.) gnashing</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ḫ̄x̄</td>
<td>hand (fem.) (839b)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ḫw̄x̄h̄</td>
<td>to be less; to be humble (841b); stative ḫ̄x̄h̄ “(is) humble”</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
BIBLIOGRAPHY

A. ABBREVIATED BIBLIOGRAPHICAL REFERENCES

COPTIC SOURCE REFERENCES


AI, AII E. AMÉLINEAU, Oeuvres de Schenoudi, vols I & II (Paris 1907-1914).

BKU Aegyptische Urkunden aus den koenigl. Museen zu Berlin: Koptische Urkunden (Berlin, 1904).

BM British Museum (British Library) Oriental MSS (unpubl.).


Ch. E. CHASSINAT, Le quatrième livre des entretiens et épîtres de Shenouti (Cairo 1911).


IF Cairo, Institut Français d'Archéologie Orientale, unpubl. codex.


K Vienna, Nationalbibliothek, unpubl. Coptic MSS

Leyd. PLEYTE-BOESER, Manuscrits copistes du Musée d'antiquités des Pays-Bas à Leide (Leiden 1897).

Ming. G.L. MINGARELLI, Aegyptiorum codicum reliquiae ... (Bologna 1785)

Miss. E. AMÉLINEAU, Monuments pour servir à l'histoire de l'Égypte chrétienne ... (Mem. Miss. Archéol. Française 4/1, Paris 1888) 277-287.

Mun. H. MUNIER, Manuscrits copistes (Cairo 1916)


Orig. T. ORLANDI, Shenute contra Origenistas (Rome 1986)

P Paris, Bibliothèque Nationale, fonds copte (unpubl. MSS)


Rossi I. ROSSI, I papiri copti del Museo egizio di Torino (Turin, 1887-1892)

Wess. 9, Wess. 18 C. WESSELY, Studien zur Palaeographie und Papyruskunde IX (Leipzig 1909) and XVIII (Leipzig 1917)
BIBLIOGRAPHY

Young


Z

G. Zöega, Catalogus codicum copticorum manucriptorum… (Rome 1810)

B. REFERENCES TO GRAMMATICAL DISCUSSIONS


BIBLIOGRAPHY


TILL: W. Till, Koptische Grammatik: saidischer Dialekt², Berlin 1961

VERGOTE: J. Vergote, Grammaire copte IIa: Morphologie syntagmatique, syntaxe (partie synchronique), Louvain 1983.


INDEX TO GRAMMATICAL TERMS OCCURRING IN THE TEXTUAL NOTES

(The index is selective and refers mostly to phenomena not especially illustrated in the Chrestomathy. References are to pages.)

article see “determination of nouns” 4, 15
assimilation 4, 15
augens, see “reinforcer”
auxiliary verbs 5, 13, 17, 34, 35, 55, 58, 91
backgrounding 36, 38
bracketing 14
compound verb 35, 49, 55, 131
descriptive verbs 12, 91
determination of noun 7, 8, 9, 10, 17, 19, 22, 23, 26, 29, 31, 46, 74, 93, 96, 98, 100, 114, 154
direct object 22, 25, 68, 73, 74, 77, 91ff., 131
determination of noun 7, 8, 9, 10, 17, 19, 22, 23, 26, 29, 31, 46, 74, 93, 96, 98, 100, 114, 154
direct object 22, 25, 68, 73, 74, 77, 91ff., 131
feminine pronoun for neuter see “neuter”
“figura Sinuthiana” 125
gender 19, 24, 28
glossing, hermeneutical 23, 24, 30, 124
impersonal 51; see “neuter”
inalienable possession 6, 30, 63, 97
juncture see “prosody”
laryngeal consonant 55, 78
letter-narrative opening role of the Cleft Sentence 52, 127
lexeme premodifier 58, 88, 93, 139
“manner”: “in the manner of”, “like” (etc.) 21, 34
negation 12, 15, 24, 27, 42, 77, 78, 91, 130, 142, 163
neuter 14, 38ff., 51, 53, 67, 102, 114, 139, 144
nucleus 23
object construction 12, 74, 91, see “direct object”
(passive voice 30, 37, 91, 92
predicate 24, 25, 28
prenominal form (“construct state”) of infinitive 52, 93
prosody 19, 22, 37, 86, 96
reflexive mode of action 53
reinforcer 5, 6, 9, 11, 16, 34, 36, 37, 55, 78
resumption 22, 24, 26, 59, 68, 74, 114, 124, 127, 155
rhetorical question 16, 20, 27, 44, 63, 64, 75, 77, 85, 89, 115, 152
syllabic nasal 87
“tautological infinitive” 60
“that” form 146ff.
theme 81, 86
topic, topicalization 80, 88, 100
transitive/intransitive verb 35, 91ff.
“vocative” 4, 28, 53, 69
zero morpheme (pronoun) 6, 34, 39, 44, 55, 77, 96
zero object 59
zeroing 6, 35, 36, 37, 51, 85, 87
TERMINOLOGICAL GLOSSARY AND CORRESPONDENCE LIST

German and French conventional equivalents are suggested only for such terms as are not simply and unambiguously transposable from English (as are e.g. "adverb", "theme", "intransitive"). Equivalence is often approximate; so are definitions and explanations given, which are practically conceived and often valid only for the application of the term in Coptic.

The user is referred to current reliable linguistic terminological dictionaries, such as: (English:) Hartmann & Stork (London, 1972); Crystal, Oxford 1985 (2nd edition); (German:) Abraham, Tübingen 1974; Lewandowsky, Heidelberg 1976 (2nd edition); Stammerjohann, München 1974; (French:) Marouzeau, Paris 1951; Mounin, Paris 1974 (also Dictionnaire Larousse de la linguistique, Paris 1973).

abstract noun (Abstraktum; nom abstrait): a noun referring to a notion or a non-material concept ("happiness", "falsehood", "truth", "coming" as in "the coming of the Normans").

actor (Agens; agent): the noun or pronoun expressing the carrier-out of an active action, or the undergoer of a passive action, or the one who is in a state ("grammatical subject": John in "John hit the ball" or "John was hurt" or "John is happy").

adjective: a class of words typically qualifying nouns ("red", "old" in "the old woman's red shawl").

"Adjective Verbs" (Copt.) ("Eigenschaftsverba"); "verbes adjectifs", "(quasi-) verbes de qualité"): a closed set of special synthetic conjugation forms with a suffixed theme, predicing quality ("... is good", "... is fair", "... is numerous" etc.).

adjunct: an optional or secondary element in a construction, typically extending or qualifying the meaning of another; it is not a main structural element; approx. = modifier, satellite, expansion ("good" in "the good soldier", "quickly" in "He moved quickly", "tomorrow" in "Come and see me tomorrow").

adnaxal: a verb form attaching a thematic element to a clause or phrase ("gone" in "I found him gone"; "cry" in "Listen to him cry!"; "he being..." in "I forgave him. he being my brother"; "hot" in "some like it hot").
adnominal: expanding or modifying a noun or pronoun ("yellow" in "a yellow book", "charming" in "this charming lady", "flowing" in "the river, flowing North, meets the lake", "who..." and "whom..." in "She, who is standing there, is my sister", "John, whom I have known for a long time, came to dinner", "that..." in "all that glitters").

adverb: an element typically qualifying or specifying a clause, an action, state or quality ("quickly", "well", "on the table", "in fact", "still", "sadly", "very").

adverbal: expanding a verb form or a clause.

adverbial phrase (Adverbialsyntagma [adverbielle Bestimmung]; syntagme adverbia [complément circonstanciel]): a syntagm in the role of an adverb; often a prepositional phrase ("at all", "on the wall", "for whom?" "like a fly").

affective: characterized by a marked emotional attitude.

Akhmimicism: a feature peculiar to the Akhmimic dialect of Coptic.

alternation, alternant: interchange of elements regulated (conditioned) by an isolable environmental factor (examples: t/d as pronounced forms of the past simple mark after English verbs: [kist], [lovd]; t/d as pronounced final/non-final base termination in German: [das rat] "wheel", gen. [des rades]; zero and [z] as pronounced alternants of final -s in French les: [le livre] (plur.), [lezami]).

anaphora, see resumption.

antecedent (Beziehungswort; antécédent): the nominal or pronominal nucleus of a relative clause ("the man" in "the man who came to dinner", "you" in "you who are my friend").

aorist (Copt.): a special conjugation form expressing general, natural or habitual action.

apodosis: the result or consequence (follow-up) constituent of a conditional sentence (the second clause of "If you come tomorrow, I shall show you the book").

aposition: a type of phrase in which the nucleus is a proper name, noun or pronoun and the expansion another noun or pronoun, with no intermediating linking mark ("John, my friend", "I, the
miserable”, “my friend the General” “New York, this immense beehive”).

article (also “determinator”): a pronominal grammatical element attached to the noun and characterizing it for its degree of definition (“a”, “some”, “another”, “this”, “the”, “any”; also zero, as in “fighting disease”, “the origins of man”).

asynthetic: not bound by formal means (other than zero) (“I remained standing — I couldn’t find a chair”).

attributively (attributive; épithète): the role of a modifier or descriptive expansion of a noun (“good” in “the good soldier”).

augens: see reinforcer.

auxiliary verb (Hilfsverb; verbe auxiliaire): a lexically empty (or relatively empty) verb carrying out the grammatical functions in syntagm with a more or less invariable lexeme (“have” in “I have come”, “make” in “make love”, “did” in “He did not come”).

base (Copt.): a prefixed morpheme in certain verbal clause patterns, characterizing the action for tense and in some cases also for affirmative or negative.

(to) bracket, bracketing (Klammerdarstellung): the analytical schematic presentation of the reference or application of an element to several following ones on (which are presented as being a different analytical rank). (“The [cats and dogs]”, “[cats'-and-dog's] meat”, “[old book] seller”, “She is [alive and well]”).

category, grammatical: the notion(s) expressed by a paradigm (e.g. “person”, “number”, “determination”, “tense”).

causal clause (Kausalsatz; proposition causale): a clause expressing cause or reason.

causative: a verb form expressing the causing or letting an action to be carried out (by another) (“You made him cry”, “Let me go!”). 

circumstantial (Copt.) (Umstandssatz; circonstantiel): a clause marked by a special conversion as adnexal to another clause or noun/pronoun; often translatable as circumstance (“...ing” as in “I found him eating supper”, “Walking home, I met Joan”; “when...”, “while...”).
clause (Teilsatz; proposition): an independent or dependent unit combining theme and rheme in nexus.

Cleft Sentence (Spaltsatz, phrase coupée): a construction in which a non-verbal element (noun, pronoun or adverbial) is marked as focus and a verb is marked as topic ("It is God who will provide", "It was yesterday (that) I saw him last", "C'est toi qui 'as changé, pas moi").

cluster (Konsonantenhaeufung; groupe consonantique): a sequence of non-syllabic consonants (esp. initial: "pr-", "cl-", "spl-").

compatible: two elements are compatible if they occur combined and adjoining in a syntagm (e.g. "yesterday" and (past simple), as in "Yesterday I found a letter in my mailbox"; [n] and [t] in final and medial position, as in "don't", "hunting"; "many" and "a", as in "many a man").

conditioning, conditioned (Bedingung, bedingt; conditionnement, conditionné): a type of dependence in which one element or form is determined by a quality of, or by another element in its environment; the conditioned element is no longer commutable (examples: in "These are my dogs", the form "are" and the -s plur. are conditioned by the form of the demonstrative "these". In "Ta fille est jolie", the fem. form of the adjective is conditioned by the fem. noun. In the English (past simple), the pronounced suffix is [t], [d] are conditioned by preceding voiceless or voiced consonants, respectively: [kist], [mu:vd]; a past tense in a dependent clause is conditioned by a main-clause past tense, as in "He said that he would come").

Conditional (Copt.) (Konditionalis; conditionnel): a special conjugation form expressing the protasis ("if..." constituent) of a condition.

conjugation, conjugation form (Copt.): the grammatical variation of a verb clause pattern by actor; a form so varying in a specific pattern.

conjunctive (Copt.): a special dependent conjugation form expressing mainly the "carrying on" or extending of a preceding verb form: see also microcoordination.

consonant: a type of speech sound produced by obstructing the passage of air in the mouth (p, t, k, g, d etc.).
construction: the grammatical arrangement of elements.

conversion, converters (Copt.): the morphosyntactic phenomenon of marking the syntactic status of a clause; a set of prefixed morphemes marking the syntactic status of a clause.

coordination: two or more elements or syntagms in an "X and Y" interdependence.

copula (Copt.): an element formally marking a nexus between theme and rHEME in a Nominal Sentence (English "is" as in "My father is a teacher" is comparable to a degree).

definite: specific, familiar, assumed as known, unambiguously identifiable; determined by a definite determinator ("the man"); "God"; "this house"; "my brother").

deictic: pointing out or indicating.

delocutive: pertaining to the third persons ("he", "she", "it", "they").

demonstrative pronoun: a pronoun pointing out, pointing at or indicating ("this", "that").

dependent clause (Nebensatz, abhaengiger Satz, Gliedsatz; proposition subordonnée, dépendante): a clause formally marked as dependent upon another ("when...") in "He laughed when I told him you wanted to see him", "till" in "Why shouldn't we go on seeing each other till we are tired of it?", "what" in "He rubbed what was left of the pommeade upon his scalp", "who" in "The girl who came to dinner yesterday is his sister").

deriving (ableitend; dérivant): forming a semantically related, semantically and often grammatically different word from another (e.g. noun from verb, verb from noun, noun from noun etc.: e.g. the deriving suffixes -ize, -en as in "circularize" from "circular", "whiten" from "white"; -or as in "actor" from "act"; -ship as in "hardship" from "hard"; -ess as in "heiress" from "heir").

determination, to determinate, determinator: marking a noun with respect to specificity and definiteness; the marker of a noun with respect to specificity and definiteness (see also article).

dialogue: a conversational type of discourse, ideally alternating between two speakers.

discourse (Diskurs, Rede, Text; discours, texte): a stretch of real attested text.
disjunction: two or more elements or syntagms in an "X or Y" interdependence; a morph marking this interdependence.

durative (Dauerzeit, Dauer--; duratif): (of an action) in progress, continuous, repetitive ("I was writing" as against "I wrote").

enclitic: a morph (e.g. particle) of weak stress and a tendency to follow and attach itself to a preceding unit carrying full stress ("then" in "Well then!"; German doch, French donc).

existant: the term stated as existing in an existential statement ("There was a king").

expansion; to expand (Erweiterung, erweitern; expansion, élargissement, élargir): addition of further elements (usually modifying or qualifying), without affecting the basic grammatical structure or relations ("lovely" and "whom..." expand "the girl" in "the lovely girl whom you saw there is his daughter"; "immediately" and "when..." expand the verb in "She immediately fainted when she heard he was alive"; "quickly" expands "come" in "Come quickly!").

extraposition; to extrapose (approx. segmentation, anticipation): a noun is extraposed when placed in front of a clause, to mark it as topic ("Man or woman — it made no difference to Minty", "as for the soup — it has been ready long ago").

feminine (weiblich, Femininum; féminin): a term, often marked, in the grammatical category of gender; in animates, typically referring to the female sex ("she-wolf", "heiress", "heureuse", "die" in "die Sache").

final clause: a dependent clause expressing purpose or willed result.

finite: (of a verb form) characterized for person ("I wished", "They are sleeping", "We were about to leave", "He had been beaten up").

to finitize: to render finite.

first person: the speaker persons ("I", "we").

focus; focal; focalization (= focussing): the center or highlight of the communication stretch (sentence and sentence complex) (It was ONLY WHEN SHE WAS TWENTY that she fell in love for the first time", "YOU certainly did not waste much time"; "She DID lose her purse that day", "Hou COUL d you behave like this?", "Damn it all, this
isn’t the Sahara. We’re only thirty-six hours from Picadilly’
marking as focal; pertaining to the focus.

function, to function (Funktion, Leistung; fonction): the role played by
an element of language and its structural relationship to other
elements; to play such a role.

gender (grammatisches Geschlecht, Genus; genre grammatical): a
grammatical category (of nouns, pronouns) displaying such
contrast as masculine: feminine: neuter, animate: inanimate (“he,
she, it”, “lion, lionness”, “wolf, she-wolf” “bon, bonne”, “der, die,
das”).

gloss, to gloss: the interpreting explanation or specification of a word
that is considered obscure or in need of interpretation; to explain
or specify such a word.

to govern (regieren; régir): to require (condition) or determine a certain
form or element; often used of verbs governing certain prepositions
(“differ” governs “from-”, “care” governs “for-”, “to accustom
[someone]” governs “with-”).

hermeneutical: see gloss, to gloss.

imperative: an addressed verb form expressing command (or forbid-
ding) or direct request (“Listen, Kate”, “Trust me”, “Come here!”,
“Don’t tell me that”).

Imperfect (Copt.): a special conjugation form (the preterite conversion
of the present form) expressing durative action in the past (cf. “I
was writing”).

impersonal: a 3rd person pronoun with no reference to any specific
noun; a clause in which such pronoun serves as theme (“it” or “es”
in “It is raining”, “It ails me”, “Es geht”).

inalienable possession (unverä usserlicher Besitz, possession inaliénable):
a type of possession that is formally marked as inherent, close or
intimate (e.g. in many languages, the “belonging” to each other of
family members. one’s parts of the body, one’s name etc.).

incompatible: elements are said to be compatible if they never occur as
combined in a syntagm, but in substitution to each other (e.g.
“when” and “while”, “a”- and [plur.]-” -s”, “three” and “a”, [n]
and [t] initially in English).
indefinite, indefinite determinator (unbestimmt, unbestimmter Artikel; indéfini, article indéfini): a non-specific individual or specimen of a class; a morpheme marking an element as a non-specific or individual or specimen of a class ("a man", "some cats", "someone", "three stones", "other gods" etc.).

independent clause (selbstaendiger Satz; proposition indépendante, principale): a clause that is formally marked as autonomous.

indeterminable: a nominal or pronominal element that is incompatible with determinators (e.g. "this", "you", "some").

infinitive: a nominal non-finite form of the verb ("to go"); (Copt.) the verb lexeme.

infix, to infix: a bound morpheme ("affix") attached inside a word; to attach a morpheme in this position (e.g. the nasal in the Latin present stems rump-, lingu-; the English number opposition of the type "tooth": "teeth", or tense oppositions of the type "ring": "rang"; "ne" in the negated form of the finite verb in French: "je-veux", "je-ne-veux pas").

interlocutive: pertaining to the first and/or second persons ("you", "toi", "vous").

intransitive: (of a verb) not governing an object (the verbs in "He ran all the way home", "This chimney smokes", "She warmed to him", "Something may turn up", "He felt sick").

"irrealis": see remote (hypothetical) condition.

jussive: the delocutive (third person) imperative (Lat. esto, Gk. ἀκουέτω, Engl. "Let him wait!").

laryngeal (consonant; also glottal): a speech sound produced in the larynx (e.g. [h], [']. ['] = [“Aleph”], [“Ajin”]).

lexeme: the basic unit of the lexicon or vocabulary.

(to) mark, marker: to characterize formally; a formal characteristic.

marked (merkmalshaft; marqué): the term of an opposition that is positive with regard to the presence of a specific linguistic feature (e.g. the plural in many languages as against the singular, with regard to the feature "number"); in French and Semitic, the feminine as against the masculine, with regard to the feature "gender"; in English, the past progressive as against the past simple, with regard to the feature "mode of action").
masculine (maennlich; masculin): a term, often unmarked, in the grammatical category of gender; in animates, typically referring to the male sex ("wolf", "heir", "heureux", "der").

microcoordination (Copt.): a special closely-knit kind of coordination expressed by the conjunctive form.

modal: expressing or pertaining to mood; the attitude of the speaker towards the stated action (e.g. wish, command, obligation, request, exhortation).

mode-of-action (Aktionsart; mode d'action): the manner of evolvement of an action (e.g. commencing, repeated, durative, terminating etc.).

modification; to modify; modifier: a describing expansion; to expand descriptively; an element expanding another descriptively ("red", "quickly" are modifiers in "The red fox jumped quickly over the hedge").

morph: a discrete, segmentable unit of discourse or text (e.g. "she", "recognize", "d", "at" "once", "that", "the", "moment", "had" "pass", "ed" in "She recognized at once that the moment had passed").

morpheme: a distinctive meaningful unit of grammar (e.g. {she}, {(e)d}, {that}, {had + (e)d}, {at} in "She recognized at once that the moment had passed").

narrative: a textual type reciting a tale, chronicle, history, report etc.; grammatical phenomena occurring in or pertaining to such a textual type.

negativizing (vereinend, niant): rendering negative.

nexus: the special interdependence and link of theme and rheme.

neuter, neutric (saechlich; neutre genre): the term in the category of gender that is neither feminine nor masculine ("it"; "das Maedchen", "gutes ... ").

neutralization (Aufhebung, Neutralisierung; neutralisation): the canceling or suppression of an opposition in a given environment (following [s], the opposition [d:t] is neutralized in favour of [t], as in "kissed" [kist]; following "three", the opposition of number is neutralized in favour of {plural}, as in "three dogs"; following a
main-clause past tense, the opposition (past: non-past) is neutralized in the dependent clause in favour of {past}, as in "He said that he would come").

nominal: pertaining to a noun; with the grammatical properties of a noun.

"Nominal Sentence" ("Nominalsatz"; "phrase nominale"): a clause pattern predicating a pronoun or noun (the clauses "This is Anthony", "You are not yourself", "It’s cold", "It’s winter", "He is sincere", "It is I", "This is my wife", "Your god is Mammon" are verbal clauses corresponding to Egyptian or Semitic Nominal Sentences).

to nominalize: to mark as nominal.

noun (Nomen; nom): a word class with a specific composite set of constructional and/or morphological properties (e.g. [Coptic] being preceded by an article or quantifier, by a special form of prepositions, occurring as rHEME in the Nominal Sentence, having a plural form, being representable by a pronoun, etc.; [English] being preceded by an article or quantifier, compatible with a plural suffix, with a possessive article — "my friend" etc.)

nucleus, grammatical the grammatical center: the grammatically important, definitive or decisive constituent of a syntagm that is not a clause (i.e. of a phrase) (e.g. "hat" in "green hat"; "bird", "ship" in "blackbird", "kingship"; "-en" in "frighten"; "this" in "this matter", German "die" in "die Frage" and so on).

object: the nominal or pronominal receiver or goal of a transitive action.

opposition: two elements are in mutual opposition if their substitution to one another in the same environment entails a change of meaning (see the examples given under paradigm).

Optative (Copt.): a special conjugation form expressing wish, prayer, promise, prophecy etc.

paradigm: a substitution class, i.e. the class of elements which may be substituted for each other in the same environment with an entailed change of meaning (e.g. the paradigm of the phonetic elements [p], [t], [k], [b], [n], [l], [h] before [i]; of the person/number characteristics in the finite verb, {I ...}, {you ...}, {he ... s}, {she ... s}, {it ... s}, etc.;
of the elements modifying adjectives ["quite", "more", "less", "very", "fairly"]; of the elements predicated by "to be" — the noun phrase paradigm ["an artist"], the adjective paradigm ["kind"], the gerund paradigm ["writing"]).

particle (Copt.) an element, often insubstantial and weakly stressed, marking a sentence for inter-sentential relationship and often indicating prosodic properties of sentence components (e.g. unstressed "then", German doch, French donc, Greek and Coptic men, gar, de ...).

passive voice: a verbal construction type in which the actor expresses the undergoer of the action, while the performer of the action is instrumentally expressed ("She was ardently kissed by her fiancé"). In Coptic, if the actor is not explicitly expressed, the verb is indistinguishable from the 3rd plur. form ("They kissed her").

pattern (Muster, Bauplan; modèle, schéma): a delimited (bounded) construction of paradigms, or the actual form representing this construction (e.g. "consonant + vowel + consonant", "pronoun + {be} + gerund", "noun phrase + finite verb + object" "article + adjective + noun lexeme"; "p-i-n", "I am working", "Snakes eat birds", "a good soldier").

perfect (Copt.): a special conjugation form expressing an action in the past ("He heard", "He has heard").

personal pronoun: element of grammar and lexicon expressing the persons: "I", "you", "he", "she", "it", "we", "they".

phrase: a syntagm that is not a clause; either the combination of a nucleus and an expansion (satellite) ("a young girl", "my friend", "a profession", "a profitable profession", "three squirrels", "the man who laughed", "a profession which is more profitable", "come quickly", "very well", "rather lazy"), or a syntagm that is not hierarchically analyzable (e.g. prepositional phrase, coordination).

plural: a term in the grammatical noun/pronoun/person category of number, marked as referring to more than one item ("dogs", "three books", "we", "those").

possessed: (a noun) that is marked (in a possession statement, clause or phrase) as belonging to a nominal or pronominal possessor ("the boy's han", "my friend" — "I have a friend").
predicate: see rheme; (to) predicate: to state as rheme.

predicative complement (praedikative Ergänzung; complément attributif, complément d'attribution): the expansion of a verb or of an object of a verb that, expansionless, is informationally incomplete or has a different meaning (“I found him gone”, “He became king”, “He felt sick”, “he turned red”, “I was appointed ambassador”, “watch him go”): a rhematic expansion.

prefix, to prefix: a bound morpheme (“affix”) attached at the head of a word; to attach a morpheme in this position (“un-known”, “de-frost”, “fore-ground”, “more-beautiful”, “je-veux”, ge-schaffen).

premodifier (Copt.): a modifier presetting, information, circumstances or attitude to a clause (“At first...”, “In fact...”, “Surely...”, “Finally, what does all this mean?”, “Frankly, I do not understand your approach”).

prenominal (Copt.): the special form of an element preceding and prefixed to a noun, demonstrative or indefinite/interrogative pronoun.

preposition: a morpheme prefixed to a noun or pronoun marking its relation to other elements in the text (“in”, “with”, “at”, “for”).


presentative: an element presenting a noun or pronoun into discourse, esp. dialogue (“Here is...”, “Look, ...” “voilà”).

presuffixal (Copt.): the special form of an element preceding and prefixed to a suffix pronoun.

preterite: non-durative (“point”) past tense (cf. English past simple: “I wrote”).

pronoun: an element used to refer (by pointing or indicating, by representation, specifically, interrogatively or indefinitely) to a person of dialogue, a noun, proper name or their substitutes (“I”, “you”, “she” [personal pronouns], “who?” [interrogative pronoun]: “anyone”, “many”, “one” [indefinite pronouns], “this” [demonstrative pronoun]).
Proper Name (Eigennam; nom propre): a naming element with grammatical properties of both noun and the quality of typical high specificity ("John", "Oxford", "January", "Les Pyrénées", "Herr Kleinhans").

prosody: the phonetic features which characterize sentence structure and are usually not expressed in text segments of their own: including stress, intonation, juncture ("liaison" & pauses).

protasis: the hypothetical ("if...") component of a conditional sentence.

qualification; to qualify: see modification.

quantifier: element marking quantity or number in a noun phrase ("three", "many", "some", "another").

reflexive: an object expansion of a verb containing a reference back to its actor ("She washed herself").

reinforcer, augens (Copt.; also "Verstaerker"): a special set of elements modifying a noun or pronoun and containing a pronominal element referring (mostly back) to this noun ("I myself", "the man, for his part", "the Church, she alone etc.")

relative (Beziehungsform, Relativum; relativ): a clause marked (in Coptic, by special conversion) as adnominal, expanding a definite noun or pronoun ("who...", "whose...", "whom...", "in whom...").

remote (hypothetical or unreal) condition (Irrealis, irrealer Konditionalsatz; condition irréelle): a hypothetical condition that is contrary to reality and conceived as no longer fulfillable ("She would have taken him in her arms if he had not spoken").

resumption, to resume, resumptive (also anaphora, anaphoric): the linking phenomenon of reference or pointing back to a preceding element (in "I realized then that John thought he understood his wife; but in fact he did not, although she invariably saw through him", "then", "he", "him", "she", and "did" are resumptive).

rheme, rhematic (Rhema, Satzaussage, Praedikat; rhème, attribut, propos, prédicat): one of the two main constituents of the information structure of the clause: the constituent that conveys new information about the theme; the main part of the clause message (in the text "The bird sank with beating wings as if the air had
grown too thin to support it. It settled and lay along the water. When they reached it, it was dead, its beak below the water, one wing submerged”, the stretches “sank with beating wings”, “had grown too thin to support [it]” “settled and lay along the water”, “reached [it]”, “dead”, “below the water”, “submerged” are rhematic).

rhetorical question: a type of question formally marked as presupposing an affirmative or negative answer or as unanswerable (bordering on exclamation): (“Can’t you be yourself?” “Is that the way to talk to your elders?” “Why can’t you say so?” “I have to live, haven’t I?”).

satellite: the expansion constituent of a phrase.

second person: the addressed person in dialogue (“you”, “toi”, “vous”).

Second Tense (Copt.) (zweite Tempora; temps seconds): a special conversion of conjugation forms, marking them, in specific contextual circumstances, as either focal (“emphatic”) or as focalizing (“emphasizing”) other components of the verbal sentence (adjunct, actor, object). An apt translation equivalent of Second Tense sentences (esp. into French) is the Cleft Sentence (“Is it for this you have come?”, “It is only on weekends that I find the time to read”, “When was it you saw him last?”).

sentence (Satz, Satzgefeue; phrase): a subtextual complex unit consisting at least of one clause, intermediate between clause and paragraph.

singular: a term in the category of number, unmarked or referring to not more than one item (“dog”, “a dog”, “book”, “a book”, “I”, “this”).

stative (trad. qualitative) (Copt.): a special verb form for expressing passive or intransitive state or a quality (“broken”, “going”, “thirsty”, “impure”).

sonorant (also “liquid”): a type of consonant that is especially prone to be syllabic (in Coptic [l] [m] [n], [r], [v]).

subject: see theme, topic.

suffix: a bound morpheme (“affix”) attached at the end of a word; in Copt. conventionally used of a special set of suffix pronouns, which are sometimes infixed.
superlinear (or supralinear) stroke (Sahidic Copt.) (Silbenstrich, ueber-gesetzter Strich; trait superlinéaire): a short stroke placed above consonants or consonantal combinations, indicating their syllabic nature.

suppletion: the use of different externally unrelated forms to replace or supply part of a paradigm ("go" + "went", "am" + "is" + "was" + "be" are instances of suppletion).

syllabic: constituting a syllabic or the center of one.

syllable, syllabic: a complex phonetic unit comprising an opening segment (consonant or sonant), a center (vowel or sonant) and a closing segment (consonant or sonant) (exx. [com-mu-ni-sm], [bo-tm], [wa-tr], [se-cu-ri-ty]); constituting a syllable or the center of one.

syntagma: the combination of two or more morphs.

synthetic (of grammatical forms): characterized by a close merging or fusion of grammatical and lexicemic elements in a word (e.g. "bought", in contrast to "love-d", "feet" in contrast to "hand-s").

tautological: expressing the same twice over, esp. in a different form.

Temporal (Copt.): a special dependent conjugation form expressing time or cause dependence ("when...", "since...").

tense (Tempus; temps): the grammatical category of marking the time reference for a verbal action.

third person: the person not taking active part in the dialogue ("he", "she", "it", "they").

theme, thematic (Thema, Subjekt, Satzgegenstand; thème, sujet): one of the two main constituents of the information structure of the clause: the constituent that least advances the communication; the part containing given or presupposed information; what is being discussed (in the text "The bird sank with beating wings as if the air had grown too thin to support it. It settled and lay along the water. When they reached it, it was dead, its beak below the water, one wing submerged", the stretches "the bird", "the air", "it", "they", "its beak", "one wing" are thematic).

topic, topicalization: what is being discussed; the textual elements that is not the focus of the communication stretch (sentence and
sentence complex); the elements that are context-bound (in the
text: "Yes, it was ugly, the human figure. Man or woman, it made
no difference to Minty. The body's shape, the running nose,
excrement, the stupid postures of passion, these beat like a bird's
heart in Minty's brain", topics are "the human figure", "Man or
woman", "The body's shape, the running nose, excrement, the
stupid postures of passion"); marking as topic.

transitive: (of a verb) governing an object (the verbs in "He felt his
shirt", "He turned out the light", "How many cigarettes do you
smoke per day?").

unmarked (Merkmallös; non-marqué): the term of an opposition that
is neutral with regard to the presence of a specific linguistic feature
(e.g. the singular in many languages as against the plural, with
regard to the feature "number"; in French and many Semitic
languages, the masculine as against the feminine, with regard to the
feature "gender"; in English, the past simple as against the past
progressive, with regard to the feature "mode of action").

variation, variant: the fluctuation of forms, with no entailed difference
in meaning; such a form ("can't" and "cannot", [u] and [u:] as
pronunciation of "-oo-" in some types of English, "that", "wh-",
"zero" as relative áarkers; "well cared-for lady's bicycle" and
"lady's bicycle, well cared-for"; "...pas" and "ne...pas" in some
types of French, are all variants, mainly of stylistic motivation).

verb: a word class with a specific composite set of constructional and/
or morphological properties (e.g. [Coptic] being conjugated in one
of the conjugation patterns, being potentially a member in a
causative: non-causative opposition, etc.; [English] being charac-
terized for person/number and tense, modified by adverbs, etc.).

verboid: a clause form that shares the syntactic properties of a verb but
not its morphological properties (in Coptic, the expression for "to
have").

vowel (Vokal, voyelle): a type of speech sound produced with no
complete closure of the speech organs (e.g. [a] [e] [i] [o] [u]).

zero element, zero morph (Null-Morphem; morphème zéro): a signifi-
cantly absent element (morph); an absence of an element (morph)
that is meaningful (e.g. the plural mark in "fish-Ø", cf. "fish-es";
the singular "book-∅" as opposed to the plural "book-s"; the 1st and 2nd persons, Present Simple, "I-love-∅", "you-love-∅", as opposed to the 3rd person, "he-love-s"; the masculine form of the adjective in French, as in "bon-∅" vs. "bon-ne"). For "zero article" see "article".

zeroing (Null-Realisierung; réalisation zéro): the (conditioned) realization of an element as zero (e.g. the pronunciation of "p-", "k-", before "n", "s", as in "pneumonia", "knee", "psychology"; the realization of one of the "t"s in the fast pronounced form of "Where did you get to?"; the realization of the finite verb in the response constituent of the dialogue "What would you like?" — "Tea, please").